This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google books

https://books.google.com

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 00697337 8

Digitized by Google

ANNEX

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MILITARY
30 SEP 1933
ARCHIVES

A BRIEF HISTORY

OF

THE ROYAL TANK CORPS

BY

F. G. WOOLNOUGH, L.C.P.

Army Educational Corps

SECOND EDITION.

ALDERSHOT
GALE & POLDEN, LTD., WELLINGTON WORKS
ALSO AT LONDON AND PORTSMOUTH

Digitized by Google

ALDERSHOT
PRINTED BY GALE & POLDEN, LTD.
WELLINGTON WORKS
—
1925

P. 6012.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

THIS brief War History of the Royal Tank Corps—which is also almost its entire history—has been collected from various sources in order to enable a recruit to become acquainted with the principal deeds of arms performed by the tank, to aid in the fostering of *esprit de corps*, and to show how some of the individual members of our nation persevered, in the face of many difficulties, to give our Army that weapon which triumphantly solved the problem of movement on the Western Front.

It will serve recruits of the Royal Tank Corps as a textbook in regimental history, a subject of outstanding importance in the syllabus of the Third Class Certificate of Education.

Many deeds of heroism have been purposely omitted from this brief record. They may be read in back numbers of "The Royal Tank Corps Journal," in Colonel Fuller's "Tanks in the Great War," and in "The Tank Corps," by Major C. Williams-Ellis and A. Williams-Ellis . . . from which sources most of the matter of this book has been gathered.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

		PAGE
1.	The Origin of the Tank	1
2.	The Mark I Tank	5
3.	Battle of the Somme, July, 1916	6
4.	Organization	8
5.	The Battle of Arras, April, 1917	9
6.	Second Battle of Gaza, April 17th, 1917 ...	12
7.	The Battle of Messines, June, 1917	14
8.	The Third Battle of Ypres, July-August, 1917	15
9.	Third Battle of Gaza, November, 1917 ...	17
10.	Cambrai, November, 1917	18
11.	Tank Auxiliary Services	21
12.	Second Battle of the Somme, March, 1918 ...	22
13.	Villers-Bretonneux, April 24th, 1918	23
14.	Hamel, July 4th, 1918	24
15.	Moreuil, July 17th, 1918	24
16.	Amiens, August 8th, 1918	25
17.	Bapaume and the Second Battle of Arras, August-September, 1918	27
18.	Epehy, September 17th, 1918	29
19.	Battle of Cambrai—St. Quentin, September 27th, 1918	30
20.	Battles of the Selle and Maubeuge, October, 1918	33
21.	Comparison of Types of Tanks	35
22.	Present Units of the Royal Tank Corps ...	36
23.	Deeds which Won the Victoria Cross ...	37
24.	Summary of Awards Gained by the Royal Tank Corps, 1916-1918	40
25.	Army Order 368 of 1923	41

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

OUR COLONEL-IN-CHIEF.

Digitized by Google

A BRIEF HISTORY
OF
THE ROYAL TANK CORPS

1. The Origin of the Tank.

"THERE is nothing new under the sun" is a well-worn saying, yet as true in its application to the idea responsible for the production of the tank as in most other cases.

In attack, Julius Cæsar frequently employed a special formation of troops—the "testudo"—in which the men of the front rank held their shields in front, the remaining men locking theirs over their heads, opposing a veritable "tortoise-shell" to volleys of missiles. When besieging a stubbornly-held city, he made use of wheeled towers several stories high, from which missiles could be discharged at short range upon the garrison, while battering-rams were worked below. In Britain, Cæsar's troops were opposed by Britons in war chariots; long scythe-like blades fixed to the axles formed formidable weapons.

The knight of the Middle Ages was almost entirely invulnerable in his casement of armour. The discovery and application of gunpowder, while it led to the disappearance of body armour, led to other defensive devices being adopted—the fortification, the trench, the use of "dead" ground for the purpose of shielding troops from fire, and so on.

On the sea, the wooden walls of Nelson's days have slowly been converted into the armour-plated battleships of the present, every advance in the science of

Digitized by Google

armour-piercing being responded to by the ship-builder.

In the three cases referred to above, the principle held in mind was to defend an attacker during his operations, and that principle is the predominant one in the case of the tank—to hit without being hit.

During the Great War the series of rapid manœuvres which constituted the open warfare period terminated towards the latter part of the autumn of 1914, and gave place to a much more protracted period of trench warfare. The combination of trench, machine gun, and wire, all defensive, gave such an overwhelming advantage to the defender that each offensive operation was planned and attempted in vain.

Three outstanding methods were adopted, in the order named, to break down defence—artillery, gas, and the tank.

The first phase saw all armies multiplying batteries to an hitherto unheard of extent. Attacks were preceded by bombardments which were devastating in their results, yet had those results neutralized by factors which could not be dissociated from them. Though hostile trenches and wire were rendered non-effective, the element of surprise—always a most powerful factor in war—had been sacrificed, and, furthermore, the shelled areas were so torn that methodical advance over them was impossible.

The second method—gas—was initially employed by the Germans during the Second Battle of Ypres, and gained success then because our troops possessed no antidote. Given sufficient gas and a favourable wind, it seems clear that great advantages would be in the hands of an attacking force. Germany employed gas before large quantities were available, and was denied the second factor—a favourable wind—on the Western Front. The gas-mask neutralized the efforts of the German chemist, and our own gas attacks were

Digitized by Google

generally more successful in their results than were those of the enemy.

July 1st, 1916, will long be remembered in connection with the ill-fated Battle of the Somme. Our swollen casualty lists demonstrated in fearful fashion how defence was still superior to attack, even when made by the best fighting men.

During the autumn of 1914, armoured cars had been employed by us with considerable success in North-West France and Belgium. Their success may have caused alert minds to investigate the possibilities of expanding their power and capabilities. In October, 1914, Colonel E. D. Swinton suggested the introduction of an armoured car fitted with " caterpillar " wheels, and capable of crossing trenches and of flattening wire entanglements. In November of the same year, Captain T. Tulloch, of the Chilworth Powder Company, communicated with Colonel Swinton and with Colonel Hankey, Secretary of the Committee of Imperial Defence, and, at a later date, with Mr. Winston Churchill, relative to the possibility of constructing a land cruiser sufficiently armoured to enable it to penetrate defensive works. Mr. Churchill, in January, 1915, brought the idea to the notice of Mr. Asquith, then Prime Minister, in very emphatic terms, and in the same month Colonel Swinton again represented his ideas to the War Office, but no action was taken. In June, 1915, the Colonel was successful in inducing Sir John French to give his official support to the suggestion.

Meanwhile, the Admiralty had been active. A Landships Committee had been formed under Mr. D'Eyncourt. Mr. Tritton and Lieutenant W. G. Wilson were two of the experts entrusted with the work of preparing designs of both a wheel and a caterpillar armoured tractor. Colonel Swinton's original specification was adopted as a basis, and in

Digitized by Google

June, 1915, a design was evolved which eventually gave the first or Mark I Tank.

In June, 1915, was taken the important step of uniting the experimental work of the War Office and that of the Admiralty, and a joint Naval and Military Committee came into existence. This committee caused an experimental land cruiser to be constructed on the lines of the machine designed by Mr. Tritton and Lieutenant Wilson, and in January, 1916, it was completed. Representatives of the Army Council and of General Headquarters, France, witnessed a trial of it at Hatfield in February, and in the following month it was decided to form a small unit of the Machine Gun Corps, to be named the " Heavy Section." Colonel E. D. Swinton was placed in command, and a training camp was established at Bisley, being moved afterwards to Elvedon near Thetford. Junior officers were posted from the cadets of the 18th, 19th, and 21st Royal Fusiliers, other officers and men from the M.M.G.C., and drivers from the Mechanical Transport, A.S.C.

On August 13th, 1916, the first detachment of thirteen tanks left Thetford for France, to be followed eight days later by twelve more. By the end of the month, two complete companies, " C " and " D," had crossed, and were encamped in a training centre at Yvrench, near Abbeville, under Lieut.-Colonel Brough. He, having organized the final training, returned to England, and Lieut.-Colonel R. W. Bradley assumed command of what was now known as the Heavy Section, Machine Gun Corps.

G.H.Q. had decided to employ tanks in the next great attack in the Somme battle, and the two companies were accordingly moved forward to a position near Bray-sur-Somme.

Digitized by Google

2. The Mark I Tank.

The Mark I Tank was "a mechanically-propelled cross-country armoured battery," 26 ft. 6 ins. long, 12 ft. 9 ins. or 10 ft. 5 ins. wide and 8 ft. 1 in. high. It weighed approximately 26 tons, had a Daimler engine of 105 horse-power, and had a maximum thickness of armour of 12 millimetres (almost half an inch).

The three main characteristics of all tanks are, in general terms, mobility, security, and offensive power, and in connection with this first type it may be noted :—

Mobility : The tank could travel over flat ground at one hundred to one hundred and twenty yards per minute, over ground intersected by trenches, at thirty to forty yards per minute, and at night at fifteen yards per minute. It could span a trench nine feet wide, and surmount an obstacle five feet high.

Security : It was proof against ordinary bullets, shrapnel, and most shell splinters.

Offensive Power : The "male" type carried two 6-pounder guns and four Hotchkiss machine guns, for which were 160 shells and 1,500 rounds S.A.A. respectively, while the "female" was armed with machine guns only—five Vickers and one Hotchkiss, carrying for them 7,800 rounds S.A.A.

The disadvantages of the Mark I Tank were principally those affecting mobility. Ten miles was about as far as it could travel without replenishing its fuel, and its crew could not exist in it during action much beyond ten hours. For steering purposes, it was fitted with a tail consisting of two large and heavy wheels. The fittings of these gave much trouble, and they were extremely vulnerable to shell fire. Observation inside was so bad that efficient fire control was impossible.

Digitized by Google

3. Battle of the Somme, July, 1916.

The Battle of the Somme had opened on the first of the month. On our right, between Maricourt and Ovillers, a successful advance had been made; on our left, between Ovillers and Gommecourt, we had been checked. No further advance in this latter area was attempted until November. The district lying between the Somme and the Ancre is broken into strongly-marked valleys, and in 1916 these were so powerful a natural defensive line that a heavy artillery bombardment was always regarded as an essential preliminary to any attack. The ground was consequently severely "crumped."

A total of fifty-nine tanks was available. These were distributed as follows:—

Fourth Army: XIV Corps, 17; XV Corps, 17; III Corps, 8.

Reserve Army: 7; G.H.Q. Reserve (unsound machines), 10.

The Fourth Army was to attack between the Combles Ravine and Martinpuich; the Reserve Army was to fight on its left, and the French on its right.

The tanks moved up to their starting points during the night of September 14/15th. Seventeen became non-effective on the way, either being ditched or breaking down mechanically. Those operating with the XV Corps in the centre alone rendered service which proved valuable not only in point of actual worth in battle, but as a demonstration from which lessons could be learnt. The tanks allotted to this corps moved forward from various starting points near Delville Wood. Eight were to advance on the west of Flers, and six on the east of that village, Gueudecourt, and a sunken road to the west of it being their destination. Each tank had its own detailed route and time-table. Twelve machines moved off, eleven reaching the hostile trenches.

Digitized by Google

When our infantry was held up in front of the Flers line by wire and machine-gun fire, one tank was placed astride a trench, enfiladed it, then collected 300 Germans who surrendered. Another tank entered Gueudecourt and attacked an enemy battery with its 6-pounders, destroying one gun of the battery, and then itself receiving a direct hit which caused it to catch fire.

Tanks went into action for the second time on September 25th and 26th. Of thirteen employed, nine were ditched in shell holes, two gave valuable assistance to the infantry engaged in assaulting Thiepval before suffering the same fate, while one of the remaining pair, more fortunate than its comrades, performed deeds which have become famous. It was detailed to assist the 64th Brigade (21st Division), in an attack on Gird Trench, near Gueudecourt. The brigade had obtained footholds in the line at two places, but between them existed 1,500 yards of trench, strongly held and protected by uncut wire. The tank—a female—started at 6.30 a.m. to move along the trench, sweeping it with machine-gun fire, and flattening the wire. As the tank moved along, the enemy surrendered to the following infantry. By 8.30 a.m. the whole length had been cleared and occupied by us. The infantry then advanced towards their final objective, being accorded very welcome assistance by the tank. During the capture of the trench, 370 Germans surrendered, and a large number was killed. Our casualties numbered five.

The third occasion on which tanks were employed occurred during the last of the 1916 Somme operations, still in the Ancre area. Heavy rain had converted the already difficult ground into a morass of mud, and an originally extensive programme was reduced to one in which only nine tanks figured. On November 13th, during the attack near St. Pierre Divion, all three tanks operating came to grief in the mud. Two others,

Digitized by Google

assisting in the attack on Beaumont Hamel, were also ditched. On the following day, three machines were sent to eliminate a strong point to the south of Beaumont Hamel. One was put out of action by a direct hit, and the others were ditched on arriving at the German front line.

Nevertheless, they brought their guns to bear on the stronghold and kept up such a well-directed fire that the garrison of 400 men surrendered.

The results of the three preceding actions may be summarized as follows :—

1. In principle, the tank was a sound fighting machine.
2. Mechanical improvements were not only desirable but necessary.
3. Generally, commanders of other units were unable to employ tanks to the best advantage, for they knew little about them.
4. Crews required very thorough and careful training.
5. Careful preparation and reconnaissance were absolutely necessary to make tank operations successful.
6. Efficient supervision in battle demanded a good system of communication
7. A separate supply organization was necessary to maintain tanks in action.
8. Tanks drew much fire away from our infantry, and raised their morale, at the same time lowering that of the enemy's troops.

4. Organization.

On September 29th, 1916, Lieut.-Colonel H. J. Elles, D.S.O., was appointed Colonel Commanding the Heavy Section, Machine Gun Corps, and on the same day the decision to build a thousand tanks was made. The Heavy Section was at that time composed of four companies—"A," "B," "C," and "D"—each company

Digitized by Google

containing four sections, each of six tanks, with one spare tank per company = $(4 \times 4 \times 6) + 4 = 100$ Each section contained three male and three female machines, each having a crew of one officer and six other ranks.

In October, 1916, the Tank Training Centre at Wool became a separate establishment, a depot to feed the fighting units. The four companies in France were converted into four battalions—still "A," "B," "C," and "D" of the Heavy Branch, Machine Gun Corps—and sanction given for the raising of five new battalions at home. The nine battalions were grouped into three brigades. Each battalion consisted of three companies, each company of four fighting sections and a headquarter section; the former had five, the latter, eight tanks.

Early in 1917, the number of tanks per battalion was reduced, first from 72 to 60, and then to 48.

As a result of the work done by tanks in the Battle of Arras (April, 1917), it was proposed to increase the number of battalions to eighteen, and this expansion was authorized on June 28th. An alteration of the title to "The Tank Corps" was also made on this date.

Unfortunately, the expansion was held up owing to the heavy demands made by the infantry for recruits, but in November it was again sanctioned. On this occasion, the opportunity was taken to substitute brigade workshops for those previously operated by battalions. The last of the eighteen battalions proceeded to France in September, 1918. For operations in 1919, it was proposed to increase the number of battalions to 34, involving the employment of no less than six thousand tanks, but this was rendered unnecessary by the events of 1918.

5. The Battle of Arras, April, 1917.

In 1917, the German front presented two salients which, if attacks on them were successful, promised to yield substantial results to the Allies.

Digitized by Google

The first was a huge one, running along the line Ostend—Noyon—Nancy, and having behind it two main lines of communication based on Valenciennes and Mesieres. The second was a smaller one, forming an offshoot of the first, and embracing Arras, Gommecourt, and Morval, having Queant in its interior. Near this latter town, the German Sixth and First Armies met, and at their point of juncture each could be struck. An attack on this second salient, if successful, would threaten Valenciennes, and also cause such a diversion of German reserves that the French might be able to seize Mesieres.

Towards the end of February it was evident that the Germans intended to abandon the angle between Arras and Craonne—part of the Gommecourt Salient—and to fall back to a better and greatly strengthened position.

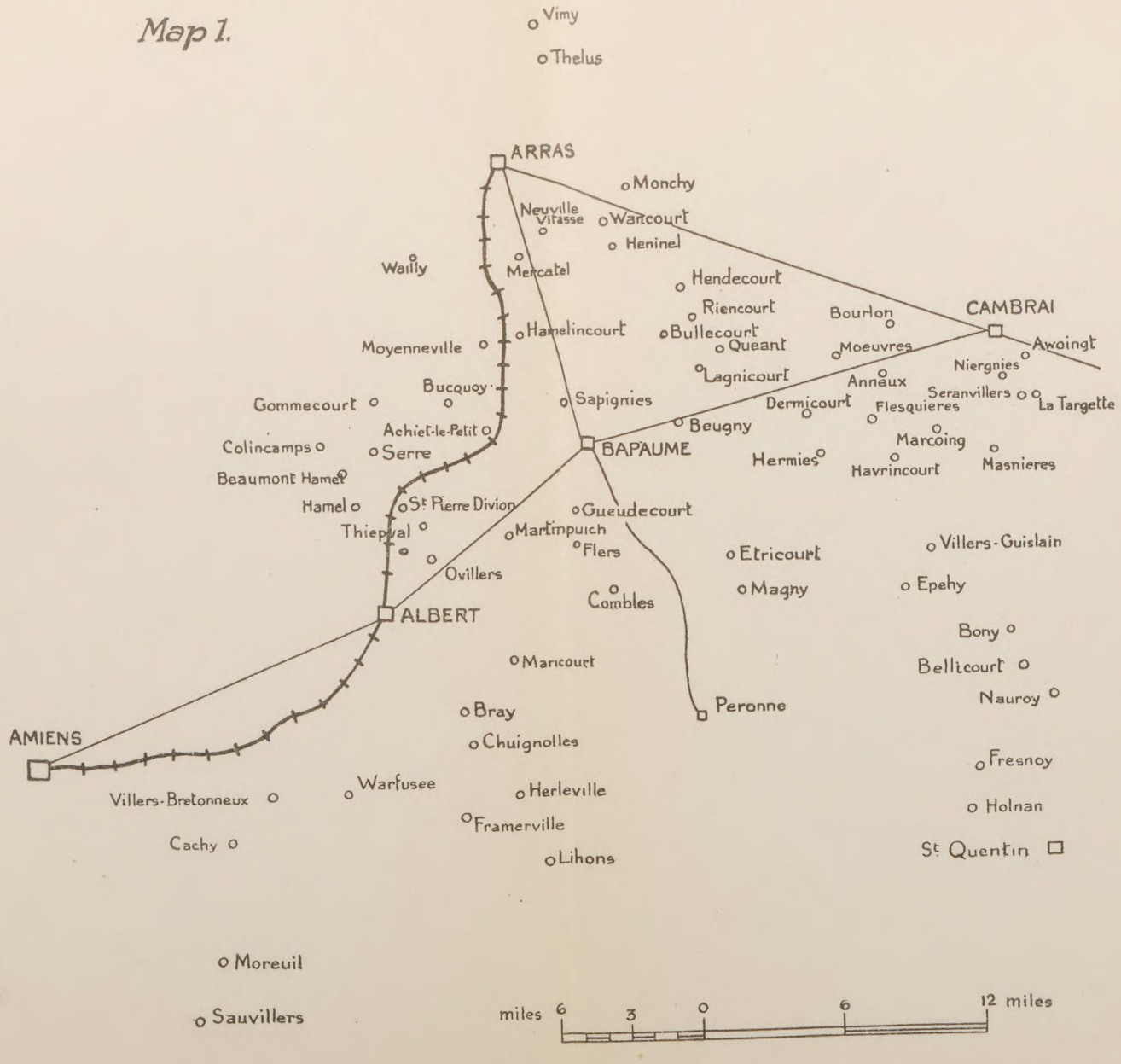
In our attack, the main blow was to be struck in the Soissons—Rheims area, and it was important to weaken the defence here by making it necessary for the enemy to send his reserves to the Drocourt—Queant line. Yet this line should be pierced by us before the arrival of those reserves . . . hence time was an important factor. Tanks, it was decided, should assist in gaining this time, and the sixty machines available were distributed as follows :—

8 (of " D " Bn.) to the First Army to operate against Vimy Ridge and Thelus.
40 (of " C " Bn.) to the Third Army to operate in the Scarpe Valley.
12 (of " D " Bn.) to the Fifth Army to operate on the right of the Third Army.

Unfortunately, heavy rain fell during the early hours of the morning of April 9th, and the First Army tanks became engulfed in the sodden ground about five hundred yards from the German line. The Canadians, under the shelter of a most efficient artillery

Digitized by Google

Map 1.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

barrage, took Vimy Ridge, and several thousand prisoners, and so the absence of the tanks did not materially affect the fortunes of the day.

Of eight tanks operating north of the Scarpe, four were ditched, one was rendered non-effective by shell fire, but the remaining three worked their way along the valley, busily engaged with hostile machine-gun nests. Those working south of the river had varied fortunes; the ground had been heavily shelled, and two feet of water existed in some trenches.

On April 11th, three important tank attacks were made:—

1. This was a successful action conducted by six machines against Monchy. Three only reached the town, but they ensured its occupation by the infantry, and, had they been able to continue action, further advance would have been possible.

2. Four tanks from Neuville—Vitasse worked down the Siegfried line to Heninel, then turned to Wancourt, and were in action here, alone, for several hours. All four returned in safety, after causing large numbers of casualties.

3. Eleven tanks led an attack on Bullecourt. Those working on the wings were soon put out of action by artillery fire, but in the centre, two succeeded in piloting the infantry into the villages of Reincourt and Hendecourt. Tank tracks in the snow stood out sharply. The Australian infantry, wading through the snow, took to the tracks, and both machines and men thus offered excellent targets to German artillery. Our flanks were driven in by a counter-attack, the villages retaken by the enemy, and the tanks and infantry captured. This was a piece of bad luck, for not only did it cause the Australians to regard tanks as being unreliable, but the Germans were able to note that their new armour-piercing bullets would pierce the side of a tank, and they accordingly issued these bullets to all troops.

Digitized by Google

The interest in the Bullecourt operation lies in the fact that it was the first occasion on which tanks were used to replace artillery in the work of dealing with wire, and of creating a defensive barrage for our infantry.

6. Second Battle of Gaza, April 17th, 1917.

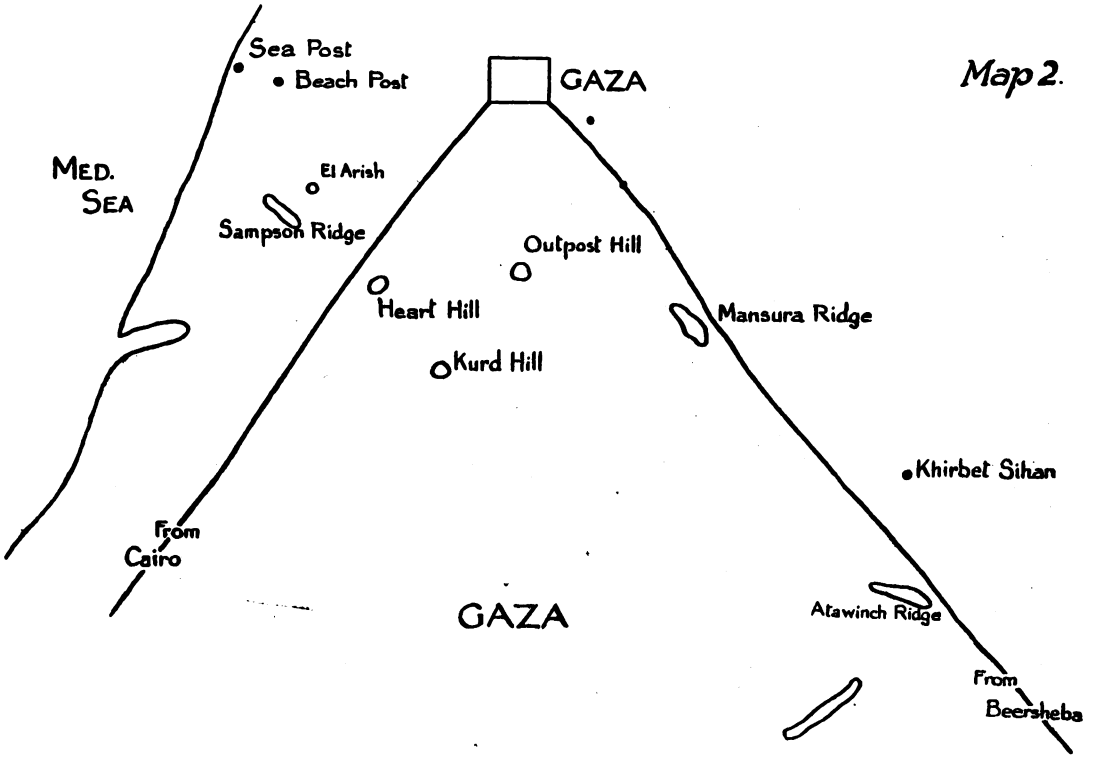
The success achieved by Tanks on the Somme in 1916 led to the despatch of eight machines to Egypt, for employment against the Turks. Through an error, old experimental machines were sent, instead of new ones. A detachment of 22 officers and 226 other ranks arrived in Egypt in January, 1917, and passed on to Khan Yenus, near El Arish.

The first Battle of Gaza had ended with a Turkish move which threatened our lines of communication, and forced a retirement to the south of Gaza. The Turks, about 30,000 strong, were holding a line Gaza—Hariera—Sheika, about sixteen miles in length.

For the second attack on this line, the 52nd, 53rd, and 54th Divisions were employed, tanks being allotted to each. Those with the first-named divisions were not required—the enemy was completely surprised by the infantry attack and abandoned his position. Of the two operating with the 54th Division, one was destroyed by a direct hit, but the other cleared trenches behind the Sheikh Abbas Ridge, which commanded Gaza, and thus allowed the infantry to consolidate there. On the evening of April 17th, the three attacking divisions held a line running from the coast to Heart Hill, Kurd Hill, Mansura Abbas, and Atawinch Ridge.

The second phase of the battle began on the morning of the 19th. While the Australian Corps attacked the eastern defences of Gaza, the other three divisions were to make the main assault on Ali El Muntar. The 52nd, 53rd, and 54th Divisions had, respectively, four, two, and one tanks allotted to them.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Three of the 52nd Division tanks went into action. One fell into a gully, another received a direct hit, while the third was successful, despite intense machine-gun fire, in its task of assisting the infantry to capture Outpost Hill, but they were evicted by a counter-attack.

One of the two tanks with the 53rd was unable to proceed because of a broken track. The other, the "Tiger," led the advance, captured Sampson Ridge, and proceeded to the El Arish Redoubt, but had to withdraw as the infantry could not follow it. It fired 27,000 rounds of S.A.A. in a six hours' action, and every member of its crew was wounded.

The tank with the 54th assisted in the capture of the Khirbet—Sihan Redoubt. One of its tracks was then smashed by a direct hit, and while the machine was ineffective a Turkish counter-attack recaptured the redoubt and took prisoner both tank and infantry.

The tanks engaged were Marks I and II; they covered an average of forty miles of country. Too much was expected of the few employed, and on this occasion an extremely large number of machine guns, ably served by the Turks, called for a correspondingly large number of tanks to deal with them.

7. The Battle of Messines, June, 1917.

This was fought as the first operation of a series intended to drive the Germans from the coast-line running from Nieuport to the Dutch frontier, to loosen their hold on Lille, and to open the road to Antwerp and Brussels.

The Messines—Wytschaete Ridge was heavily mined by May, 1917. The 9th, 10th, and 11th Anzac Corps (of the Second Army) were detailed to attack the ridge, and, in the order named, had 28, 12, and 32 tanks allotted to them.

An extraordinary artillery bombardment was kept up almost continuously from May 28th to June 7th;

Digitized by Google

five miles of galleries had been tunnelled under the ridge, and twenty land mines containing over a million pounds of ammonal were exploded as the signal for attack on the morning of June 7th. So great was the combined effect of these two agents, both to defensive works and enemy morale, that but little work was left to be done by the forty tanks which went into action. They were prominent in the attack on the Oostaverne Line, occupying the ground beyond it before the infantry arrived, and by disorganizing the scheme of defence there, making its occupation easy.

By nightfall we held our final objectives everywhere, had 7,300 prisoners, and a large number of field and machine guns in our possession.

8. The Third Battle of Ypres, July-August, 1917.

In preparation for this engagement all available heavy tanks, that is, the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Tank Brigades, were moved into the Ypres Salient, the 1st and 3rd assembling in Oosthoek Wood, the other at Ouderon. The Ypres—Comines canal, which ran parallel to the line of advance, was bridged by the 184th Tunnelling Company, Royal Engineers.

The battle was preceded by a furious artillery bombardment for twenty-four days. The effect of the intense hail of shells was to destroy the drainage system of a district in which drainage had always been a baffling problem.

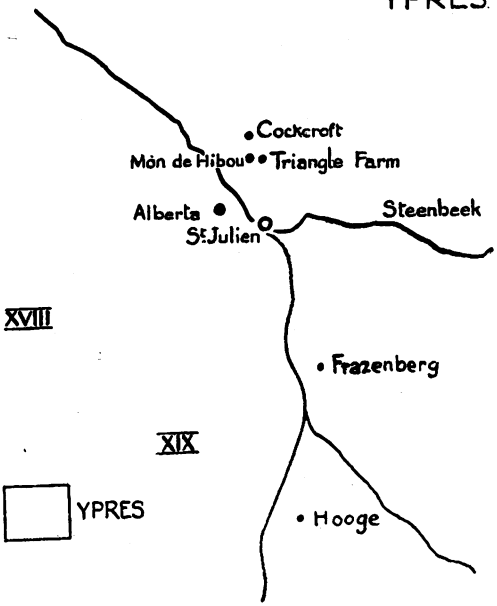
The II Corps, attacking on the right, had in front of it ground broken by swamps and woods, with only three possible approach avenues for tanks; these formed dangerous defiles.

The XIX Corps, attacking to the east of Ypres, had in advance of it the water-logged valley of the Steenbeek.

The XVIII Corps, on the left, was also fronted by the Steenbeek, across which only one good crossing

Digitized by Google

YPRES. *Map 3.*



Scale: 1 inch = 1½ miles

Digitized by Google

existed—at St. Julien—but this also formed a dangerous defile.

The attack of July 1st cannot be considered as a tank success. On the front of the II Corps, the machines were caught in the defiles by artillery fire, and, particularly around Hooge, suffered large casualties.

The tanks operating in the centre gave much assistance towards the capture of the Frezenberg stronghold, and also helped to break many German counter-attacks.

On the XVIII Corps front, at St. Julien and Alberta, the attack was materially assisted by tanks.

August 19th was the next date on which tanks were employed. One group of four machines operated against a nest of four pill-boxes, little fortresses skilfully placed, impossible targets for our heavy guns. They were situated at Hillock Farm, Mon de Hibou, Triangle Farm, and the Cockcroft. In spite of the appalling condition of the ground, these points were captured in the order named, a smoke barrage concealing operations. Fifteen casualties were sustained by the supporting infantry on this occasion; an infantry "solo" attack would, it was estimated, have cost at least six hundred casualties. This St. Julien attack partly atoned for the indifferent success obtained by tanks in the preceding operations.

9. Third Battle of Gaza, November, 1917.

After the unsuccessful attempt to capture Gaza in the spring, three additional tanks (Mark IV) were sent out, and all remained behind the lines until October, 1917.

General Allenby planned an attack on a wide front. On the left the same three divisions were to be employed, with eight tanks; on the right a feint attack was to be made on Outpost Hill. On the extreme right an

Digitized by Google

extensive flanking attack was to be made from the direction of Beersheba by Australians.

At 11 p.m. on November 1st the first phase of the battle began. Umbrella Hill was taken completely by surprise. The tanks, in accordance with plan, followed the infantry, and were at their stations by 3 a.m. The Turkish resistance stiffened; our back areas were shelled, and when the tanks, with fresh infantry, advanced to the attack on the El Arish redoubt, a very heavy barrage was encountered. Still, the enemy was driven out of the enclosed stronghold, and the two tanks engaged here were threading their way through the maze of trenches, cactus hedges and gardens when one received a direct hit and the other was ditched. Both crews joined the infantry.

No. 6 Tank captured Sea Post, and, moving along the enemy's trenches, crushed wire as far as Beach Post. In succession it dealt with three strongholds, and was then disabled by a broken track. The crew went on with the infantry. The coastal—left—attack was successful.

On the right the Australians drove in the defence for nine miles on an eight mile front, and after three days' fighting Gaza was occupied.

10. Cambrai, November, 1917.

The tank had made its first appearance in the mud of the Somme; the craters of Messines and the morasses of Ypres had tried it severely. At Cambrai the "going" was good. Between the Canal du Nord and the Canal St. Quentin was a stretch of rolling down, little cut by shell fire, but bristling with wire.

In this engagement all wire-cutting work was to be left to the tanks, who were to assault ahead of the infantry. The attack was to be an absolute surprise. The Hindenburg Line was over 12 feet wide in places, and as the Mark IV tank spanned only 10 feet, a brushwood fascine, 4½ feet in diameter and 10 feet

Digitized by Google

[*Photo : Imperial War Museum.*

CAMBRAI, 20th NOVEMBER, 1917.
At the Hindenburg Support Trench System.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

long, was carried by each machine. In each unit of three tanks, one was the advance guard, the other two making the main body. They advanced in arrow-head formation. The advance-guard tank went through the wire up to the enemy line, and turned to the left on our side of it. The left-hand main body tank advanced, dropped its fascine in the first trench and crossed, then turning to the left along the trench. The other main body tank crossed by the fascine of the first, advanced to the support line, crossed by means of its own fascine, and turned to the left. The advance-guard tank then returned, crossed the first trench by means of the fascine already there, and then, joined by the left-hand main body machine, crossed the support line. All three were then beyond the enemy support line, still with one fascine in hand.

The Third Army comprised six infantry divisions, nine Tank battalions, one cavalry corps, and 1,000 guns. Its object was to break the enemy lines between the two canals, to occupy Cambrai, Bourlon Wood and the passages over the Sensee River, to move towards Valenciennes.

The main artificial features to be overcome were three—the Hindenburg Line, its Support Line, and the Beaurevoir Line. The natural obstacles were (1) Bourlon Hill and Havrincourt Ridge, between the two canals, and (2) the Rumilly—Seranvillers Ridge, lying north of the Canal St. Quentin and parallel to it. To obtain possession of this ridge, it was necessary for us to hold the bridges at Marcoing and Masnieres, as possession of the ridge was necessary for the occupation of Bourlon to be possible.

At 6.20 a.m. on November 20th the tank battle began, the three Tank Brigades involved, the 1st, 2nd and 3rd, following the tactics specified above. Protected by smoke barrages, they moved across the German trenches, smashing machine guns and forcing the hostile infantry to seek protection below ground.

Digitized by Google

Close behind the tanks our infantry followed. Both the main system of the Hindenburg Line and its outer defences were speedily over-run, and the assault of the Support Line followed. Here a stubborn resistance was met. At Flesquieres the 51st Highland Division was held up. As its supporting tanks topped the crest they came under direct artillery fire, and suffered heavy losses. No less than sixteen machines were knocked out by a single field gun served single-handed by a German officer.

On the left the 1st Brigade with its infantry advanced four and a half miles to Anneux. On the extreme right the main road bridge at Masnieres was partially destroyed by the enemy, and the first tank to attempt to cross wrecked it completely. Sunken roads impeded the artillery, and the Rumilly—Seranvillers Ridge remained unoccupied by us. Still, during the first day's fighting 5,000 prisoners had been taken and 100 guns captured or destroyed, together with much war material.

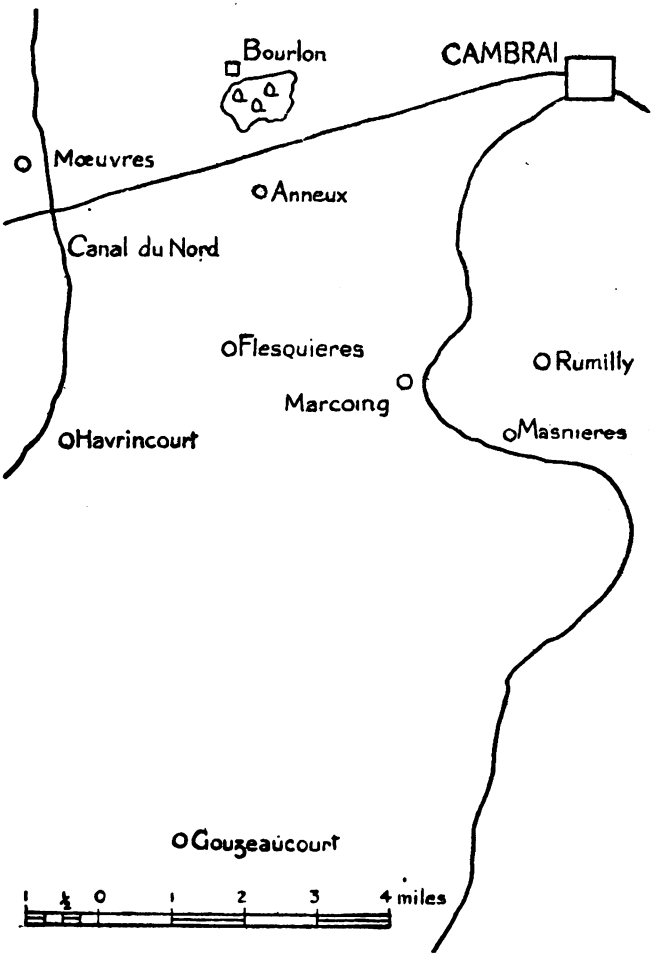
On November 23rd the 40th Division, assisted by thirty-four tanks, captured Bourlon Wood. The tanks pressed on to the village, but our infantry was too exhausted to hold it. On the 30th the 2nd Tank Brigade did very fine work in breaking a dangerous counter-attack in the Villers-Guislain area.

Brilliant results were associated with an incomplete realization of the full programme. In connection with the Tank Corps, three factors operated to cause such a result. They were—

1. The two canals made possible only a narrow base on which to attack.
2. The tanks employed were of the slow—Mark IV—type.
3. No reserves were left.

It was also demonstrated that bridging tanks and swift fighting machines were of prime necessity.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Major-General J. E. Capper, Director-General of the Tank Corps, issued a most complimentary order after Cambrai, in which references were made to "the great success attained by the Corps," and to "the courage and skill shown by all ranks in action."

11. Tank Auxiliary Services.

During the period under review, while the Tank Corps had been fighting, a network of organization had been set up in England. This led to increased production, the Metropolitan Carriage and Wagon Company being particularly prominent among manufacturing centres.

Before the Tanks fought their next battle, the Mark V came into existence, and a unit of armoured cars was formed for rapid work on good roads. Whippet tanks had already made their appearance. A small cadre of salvage tanks and of special infantry supply tanks was to be introduced. Salvage tanks were usually Mark IV machines on which special gear, such as winches and small cranes, had been fitted for hoisting wrecks out of mud, or for towing. The supply tanks, two of which could carry complete supplies for an infantry brigade for one day, were also Mark IV machines, fitted with very large sponsons. To make them light, they were not so completely armoured as the fighting tanks. The gun carrier tank was one with an elongated tail in the form of a platform, on which a 60-pounder gun or a 6-inch howitzer could be carried and fired.

Field Maintenance Companies had been formed to carry out salvage work. The services of skilled men were economized by concentrating all repair work in Central Workshops. These were established at Teneur, Central Stores being situated at Erin, about one and a half miles away. Gunnery and Tank Driving Schools were set up, the former at Merlincourt,

Digitized by Google

and Hangard Wood. The ridge was held by machine-gun groups concealed in shell-holes, while on the eastern slope two German battalions were forming in the open to attack. The Whippets destroyed all machine-gun nests, and then moved rapidly against the infantry. These, with no cover, were shot down in their ranks, over 400 being killed and wounded. The remainder fled.

14. Hamel, July 4th, 1918.

This action marked the first appearance in action of the Mark V machine. Much was expected of it, and more was realized. The attack had a twofold object—

1. To abolish a salient between the Somme and the road from Villers-Bretonneux to Warfusee.
2. To give the Australians confidence in the tank.

Hamel village and Hamel Wood—on Hamel spur—were two prominent points in the area to be attacked. An artillery barrage and smoke screens figured in the opening phases of the attack. Machine-gun nests were common.

As the barrage lifted, the tanks and infantry moved forward. In many instances the German guns were run over and their detachments crushed by the Mark V, which demonstrated its good manœuvring qualities. All objectives were reached at the appointed times; all were taken. Excellent co-operation existed between Australians and tanks. In addition to their killed, the enemy lost 1,500 men. Our casualties were just under 700.

15. Moreuil, July 17th, 1918.

This action is of special interest because it is the only one in which large numbers of our tanks operated with the French Army. The 9th Tank Battalion was engaged.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Badge of 3rd French Division presented to 9th Tank Battalion in commemoration of comradeship in action at Moreuil, July, 1918.

Digitized by Google

The operation was a surprise one to the enemy; its immediate object, the occupation of St. Ribert Wood. After an intense but brief artillery fire, the main objectives were to be encircled and then "mopped up."

After the preliminary bombardment, the tanks advanced ahead of the infantry, clearing Arrachis Wood and taking the village of Sauvillers. Sauvillers Wood was then encircled by tanks and French infantry, but while the machines were waiting for the infantry to get into touch with them, six tanks were put out of action by direct hits from a battery near St. Ribert Wood. An attack on Harpon Wood, improvised on the spot by the commanders of the 51st Infantry and "B" Company Tanks, was entirely successful.

By evening all objectives had been gained. Prisoners totalled over 1,800, and there was a large "bag" of trench mortars and machine guns. In token of its appreciation, the French Third Division presented its badge to the men of the 9th Tank Battalion.

16. Amiens, August 8th, 1918.

The Fourth Army was given the task of attacking the Amiens Salient, and twelve Tank battalions were allotted to assist. Of these, the 3rd and 6th were equipped with 48 Whippets each; the 1st and 15th with 36 Mark V* machines; the remainder with 36 fighting Mark V tanks each.

As at Cambrai, the tanks were to open the attack, no artillery bombardment being employed. The work of the gunners was to establish a barrage, engage in counter-battery work, and to advance to the support of the attacking infantry. Our troops engaged comprised the Canadian Corps, the Australian Corps, the III Corps, and the Cavalry Corps.

Out of 420 machines, 415 went into action—a triumph for the Tank Corps. The surprise attack met

Digitized by Google

with instant success. With the III Corps on the left, many tanks were put out of action by artillery fire, chiefly from Chipilly Ridge, but south of the Somme all objectives were taken up to time, 16,000 prisoners and 200 guns being captured.

On August 9th much trouble was experienced by tanks operating around the Chipilly Woods, from which an intense machine-gun fire held up our attack. Five machines were put out of action before the area was cleared.

South of the Somme the attack was continued with success, an action around Framerville standing out prominently as an example of the good results obtained from close tank-infantry co-operation.

The tanks attached to the Cavalry Corps were brought into action too late to be of service, but armoured cars, moving rapidly east along the main road, did much to complete the demoralization of the enemy.

On August 11th ten tanks of the 2nd Battalion assisted the 1st Australian Division to capture Lihons.

In four days 638 tanks had been in action; 480 of these had to be handed over to salvage, and most of the remainder required overhauling. The enemy lost 22,000 men and 400 guns—big punishment. But the greater victory was in the fact that a staggering blow had been given to German morale, for on an eleven mile front, we had advanced to a depth of nearly seven miles.

"Musical Box" was a Whippet tank of "B" Company, 6th Battalion, working with the Cavalry Corps. After passing through the 2nd Australian Division near Villers-Bretonneux, it became isolated, the other whippets being ditched. Lieutenant C. B. Arnold, its commander, saw two Mark V tanks knocked out by a four-gun battery, and he took "Musical Box" diagonally across the front of the battery without sustaining injury, then worked round a belt of trees to

Digitized by Google

take the battery in rear. The thirty gunners tried to run away, but all were shot. Proceeding eastwards, two of our cavalry patrols were rescued from parties of German riflemen. Lieutenant Arnold then reached a valley between Bayonvillers and Harbonnieres, in which was a German hutted camp, the men of which were preparing to retire. Fire was opened on them with good results. Moving across country, the crew engaged many fleeting targets. About two o'clock in the afternoon " Musical Box " was again advanced eastwards. The driver of a motor-lorry was shot as the vehicle he was driving was crossing a bridge, the lorry capsizing in a ditch. On both sides of a near railway, long lines of retreating men were visible, and fire was opened on them, resulting in heavy casualties. Two horsed wagons were next accounted for. A large transport park then came in view, with many vehicles moving on three roads in its vicinity. Bursts of fire were directed on these. Fumes caused by petrol leaking through from spare tins carried on the roof gave much trouble to the crew at this juncture, and when the Whippet came under a heavy rifle and machine-gun fire, the cab burst into flames. Driver Carney and Gunner Ribbans were dragged out of the door by Lieutenant Arnold, all three on fire. Carney was killed by a shot, and the other two were captured.

17. Bapaume and the Second Battle of Arras, August-September, 1918.

Towards the end of the Battle of Amiens, it was thought that Germany intended to effect a withdrawal on the front south of the Scarpe, and it was therefore decided that our Third Army should attack north of the Somme, while the Fourth Army kept up pressure south of that river.

Nine tank battalions were massed with the Third Army, which comprised the IV, V, and VI Corps. An attack was planned with the object of driving the

Digitized by Google

enemy eastwards over the Arras—Bapaume road, and so away from the Somme area. Tanks were to operate between Moyenneville and Bucquoy, the remaining ground being unsuitable for their employment. The III Corps was to attack between Bray and Albert—north of the Somme—accompanied by the 4th Tank Brigade. South of the Somme, the 5th Tank Brigade was detailed to assist the Australian Corps in an attack on the Herleville—Chuignolles front.

On August 21st the Third Army attacked on a front of about nine miles. The first line was easily carried. Armoured cars and whippets played a prominent part in the taking of Bucquoy and Achiet-le-Petit. The second line—which contained part of the Albert—Arras railway, strongly defended by machine-gun nests and artillery in support—was more stubbornly held, and a stiff contest developed. Tanks were in the act of crossing the railway when the mist suddenly lifted, and they were exposed to a deadly artillery fire, which accounted for the majority of the thirty-seven tanks which were disabled in this action. By avoiding the areas in which tanks attracted fire, the infantry were able to make ground, and by evening we held the railway, Courcelles, and Moyenneville, and were well placed for the following and more important attack.

On August 22nd the Third Army attacked on a front of 10,000 yards, and penetrated about four thousand yards, enveloping and securing Albert, advancing to the east of the Bray—Albert road, and taking 2,400 prisoners, and some guns.

The assault opened on August 23rd, with a series of attacks on a thirty-three mile front, from Lihons to near Mercatel, where the Hindenburg Line from Queant and Bullecourt united with the old Arras—Vimy defensive works of 1916. German machine-gunners displayed great bravery, in most cases not ceasing to serve their guns until they were crushed by our

Digitized by Google

machines. The 3rd Division with ten tanks captured the village of Gommecourt, while the Guards Division, with four tanks, took Hamlincourt. Near Sapignies, heavy machine-gun fire was met, but resistance was broken, and many prisoners taken chiefly owing to the action of Whippets. Near Courcelles, seven Whippets cut off several hundred of the enemy, and handed them over to the infantry.

During an attack on Monchy on August 25th, several tanks were knocked out, but their crews at once joined the infantry and helped to repel a small counter-attack. By this date only fifty-three serviceable machines were left in the three tank brigades.

After Bray was occupied by the Fourth Army, many minor operations were carried out by tanks and infantry in co-operation, but chief importance centred on the attack made on the famous Drocourt—Queant Line on September 2nd. This line, built in the spring of 1917, was guarded by very strong zones of wire entanglement, and was well held by machine guns. On the south, the 1st Tank Brigade operated with the 5th and 42nd Divisions against Beugny. The 2nd Tank Brigade supported the 6th Division against Moreuil and Lagnicourt. Against the Drocourt—Queant Line proper, the 3rd Tank Brigade went into action with the Canadian and XVII Corps. Opposition was weak, and all objectives were gained at a slight cost. On the next day the enemy fell back, and Whippets pushed ahead to Hermies and Dermicourt. The line had been most successfully overcome.

Since August 21st 511 tanks had been in action. During the fortnight's offensive 53,000 prisoners and 470 guns were captured—a big haul.

18. Epehy, September 17th, 1918.

On September 4th all Tank brigades were withdrawn from armies to be refitted and reorganized.

On September 17th the Third and Fourth Armies opened the Battle of Epéhy by attacking on a front

Digitized by Google

of about seventeen miles, from Holnon to Gouzeaucourt. On the following day, the 4th and 5th Tank Brigades joined the Fourth Army. The front Epéhy—Villeret, some 7,000 yards, was carried by assault, the tanks dealing with troublesome machine guns.

On the 21st after two days' rest, the attack was resumed. The 2nd Tank Brigade operated against the Knoll and Guillemont Farm with the III Corps. Two of its machines carried forward infantry, but could not drop them because of heavy machine-gun fire. Sufficient tanks were not in action to silence the numerous machine guns, and consequently much progress was not made. After another two days' rest, the assault was renewed on the 23rd on the IX Corps front against Fresnoy-le-Petit and the Quadrilateral, nineteen tanks being employed. The Quadrilateral was a strong organization of trenches and fortified cottages, which formed the key to the German defensive position in this sector. A heavy enemy gas barrage on this occasion compelled the crews to wear respirators for over two hours. Anti-tank guns were also extremely active throughout the operation. Still, three tanks persevered, and, with their infantry, penetrated right into the Quadrilateral. All machines were then put out of action by a single gun, and a withdrawal had to be effected. We had, however, won points of observation that were needed for the next attack, and during the operation had taken 12,000 prisoners and 100 guns.

19. Battle of Cambrai—St. Quentin, September 27th, 1918.

The enemy was in retreat, but it was thought that if he had time to settle into the Hindenburg Line, he would make a strong resistance. If we attacked the line immediately and broke it, we would not only cut his forces into two, but expose his great system of lateral railway communications.

Digitized by Google

The battle plan dealt with main sectors, covering a front of 16 miles. To the north, the First and Third Armies were between the Sensee River and Gouzeaucourt, their objective being Bourlon Hill. To the south, the Fourth Army had the Knoll, Guillemont Farm, and Quennemont.

East of the First Army ran the Canal du Nord, a stiff proposition for tanks to tackle. It was dry, twelve feet deep, varied in width from thirty-six to fifty feet, and in many places its sides were steep. Along one side, the banks had been made perpendicular. Sixteen tanks co-operated with the Canadian Corps, and fifteen of them succeeded in crossing the canal near Moeuvres, and then attacked Bourlon Village and the western edge of Bourlon Wood.

Twenty-six tanks operated with the Third Army south of Bourlon Wood, and also against Flesquieres and Premy Chapel. The attacks here were successful although eleven machines were rendered non-effective.

The Fourth Army assault on the three objectives named above was, on the first day, intended to obtain a better starting position for further action. On September 29th the attack was not entirely successful, and our exact territory was not known. On the following day 175 tanks were involved in heavy fighting. The American Corps was to secure Bony, the assumption being made that the three primary objectives had been seized. They were not in our possession, and the attack failed.

Tanks with the Australian Corps cleared Nauroy and Bellicourt, and thus entered the Hindenburg Line. As the attack on their north (Fourth Army) had been held up, they were exposed to an attack on their flank from that direction. Many tanks, on their own initiative, proceeded to the north to protect our troops by engaging the enemy.

The IX Corps attack on the right was a complete success. The Canal St. Quentin was crossed and

Digitized by Google

seized, Magny and Etricourt being taken with 4,000 prisoners. The tanks were unable to cross the canal with their infantry, but went south, crossed near Bellicourt, and arrived in time to be in at the taking of Magny.

On October 5th an attack on Beaurevoir failed, chiefly through poor co-operation between tanks and infantry.

On October 8th a successful attack was carried out on the front Niergnies—La Targette, the 12th Tank Battalion receiving much praise from our infantry for the support given. The enemy counter-attacked from the direction of Awoingt with four captured British Mark IV tanks, one male and three female. The male was knocked out by a 6-pounder shell from one of our tanks, one female was disabled by a shell fired from a captured German field gun by a tank section commander, and the remaining two females fled on the approach of one of our female tanks.

The success of various other small operations was contributed to by tanks, the battle ending on October 9th. The Hindenburg Line ceased to exist as an obstacle. It had been broken on a front of thirty miles, on which a penetration of about twenty miles had been made. During the final fortnight of the operations no less than 630 guns and 48,000 men were taken. The effect of this great Battle of Cambrai—St. Quentin, allied with the successes of the French in the south and around Courtrai, resulted in the withdrawal of the German forces in the Roubaix, Lille, and Douai areas, and with this retreat, the whole British front was faced with field warfare.

Rapid pursuit in the open country ahead was beyond our powers, for the German Army, though beaten, was not broken. Cavalry action, in view of the splendid machine-gun service of the retreating army, was out of the question. Tanks could have undertaken the work—but we had no reserve. Since August 8th

Digitized by Google

819 machines had been handed over to salvage, and the Corps losses in personnel amounted to 550 officers out of a total of 1,500 and to 2,537 other ranks out of a total of 8,000.

20. Battles of the Selle and Maubeuge, October, 1918.

After the withdrawal chronicled on the preceding page, the retiring enemy endeavoured to form a defensive line on the east side of the River Selle. On this front, the Fourth Army and the First French Army attacked from Le Cateau southwards to Vaux Andigny—about twelve miles. The 4th Tank Brigade was the only one in action. The chief obstacle was the river itself. On the morning of the 17th tanks had to move forward on compass bearings, because of fog. Each of the forty-eight machines engaged carried a crib—a large hexagonal wooden crate, reinforced with steel, a lighter and handier form of fascine—and by dropping these into the river, crossing was effected.

Isolated positions occasionally held out with much vigour, but in general, formidable resistance was not offered.

On October 20th the Third Army attacked between Le Cateau and the Scheldt Canal, four tanks crossing the Selle by means of an under-water bridge constructed during dark by the Royal Engineers. All objectives were gained.

On October 23rd thirty-seven tanks took part in a night attack made by the Third and Fourth Armies north and south of Le Cateau. The expected moonlight failed to appear, and much progress was not made until dawn. Tanks were then of material assistance to the infantry, both in engaging targets in the open, and in crushing down hedges.

During the Battle of the Selle, 475 guns and 20,000 prisoners were added to our already large total.

The Battle of Maubeuge opened on November 2nd with a IX Corps attack west of Landrecies. On the

Digitized by Google

4th the last tank attack of the war was made. The action extended on a thirty mile front from the River Oise to north of Valenciennes, thirty-seven tanks being employed. The 10th Battalion tanks assisted in the capture of Satillon, of great importance because it secured the crossing of the Oise Canal. Three supply tanks masqueraded as fighting machines at a canal bridge near Landrecies, where our infantry was held up by machine-gun fire. One tank was knocked out, but on the other two advancing, the gunners surrendered, and the canal bank was secured.

From November 4th until November 11th the 17th Armoured Car Battalion had six cars in constant action, and was specially mentioned for its work in dispersing hostile demolition parties.

Digitized by Google

THE "MEDIUM C" DEMONSTRATING ITS CAPABILITIES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

21. Comparison of Types of Tanks.

Type.	Miles per hour.	Circuit (miles).	Crew.	Armament. Male.	Armament. Female.	Period of Use.
Mark I... ,, II... ,, III...	3½	10	8	2 6-pounders, 3 Hotchkiss	2 Vickers, 3 Hotchkiss	Somme, Ancre, Arras.
Mark IV ...	4	18	8	2 6-pounders, 3 Lewis	5 Lewis	Messines, Third Ypres, Cambrai.
Mark V ...	5	22	6-8	2 6-pounders, 3 Hotchkiss	5 Hotchkiss	Hamel to end
Medium A (Whippet)	7½	35	3	—	3 Hotchkiss	April, 1918, to end.
Medium C ...	10	70	3-4	1 6-pounder, 2 Hotchkiss	4 Hotchkiss	For 1919.

Digitized by Google

22. Present Units of the Royal Tank Corps.

1st (Depot) Battalion, Bovington Camp, Wareham.
2nd Battalion.
3rd Battalion.
4th Battalion.
5th Battalion.
Headquarters, Central Schools, Bovington Camp, Wareham.
Tank Driving and Maintenance School, Bovington Camp, Wareham.
Tank Gunnery School, West Lulworth.
Tank Testing Section, Farnborough, Hants.
Armoured Car Companies, Nos. 1 to 12 (omitting No. 4) Regular.
Headquarters, Royal Tank Corps Centre, Bovington Camp, Wareham.
Royal Tank Corps Centre, India, Ahmednagar.

TERRITORIAL ARMY ARMOURED CAR COMPANIES:

19th A.C.C. (Lothians and Border Horse), Edinburgh.
20th A.C.C. (Fife and Forfar Yeomanry), Kirkcaldy.
21st A.C.C. (Gloucestershire Yeomanry), Gloucester.
22nd A.C.C. (Westminster Dragoons), Westminster, S.W.
23rd A.C.C. (Sharpshooters), St. John's Wood, N.W.
24th A.C.C. (Derbyshire Yeomanry), Derby.
25th A.C.C. (Northamptonshire Yeomanry), Northampton.
26th A.C.C. (East Riding of Yorkshire), Beverley.

The stations of Regular units can be obtained from "The Royal Tank Corps Journal," or the Army List.

Digitized by Google

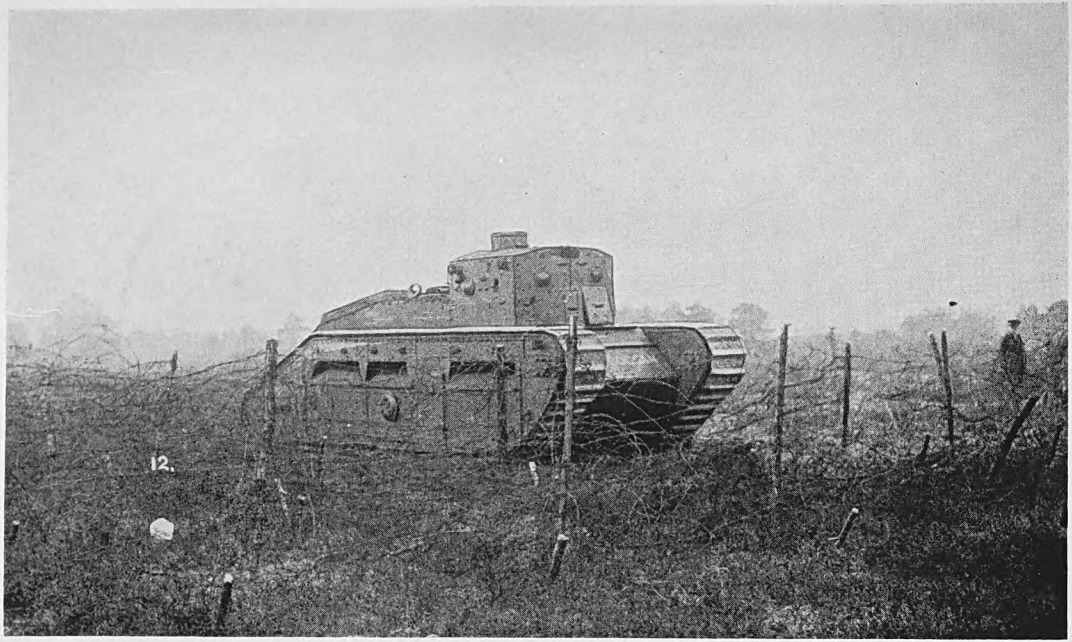


Photo: Gale & Polden, Ltd.

BREAKING THROUGH THE "SPIDER'S WEB."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

23. Deeds which Won the Victoria Cross.

CAPTAIN CLEMENT ROBERTSON, 1st Battalion. For conspicuous gallantry and devotion to duty in the Third Battle of Ypres.

From September 30th to October 4th this officer worked without a break under heavy fire preparing a route for his tanks to go into action against Reutel. He finished late on the night of October 3rd, and at once led his tanks up to the starting point for the attack. He brought them safely up by 3 a.m. on October 4th, and at 6 a.m. led them into action. The ground was very bad and heavily broken by shell-fire, and the road demolished for 500 yards. Captain Robertson, knowing the risk of the tanks missing the way, continued to lead them on foot. In addition to the heavy shell-fire, an intense machine-gun and rifle fire was directed at the tanks. Although knowing that his action would almost inevitably cost him his life, Captain Robertson deliberately continued to lead the tanks when well ahead of our own infantry, guiding them carefully and patiently towards their objective. Just as they reached the road, he was killed by a bullet through the head, but his objective had been reached and the tanks in consequence were enabled to fight a very successful action.

By his very gallant devotion, Captain Robertson deliberately sacrificed his life to make certain the success of his tanks.

T./LIEUTENANT (A./CAPTAIN) RICHARD WILLIAM LESLIE WAIN, 1st Battalion. For most conspicuous gallantry in action near Marcoing, on November 20th, 1917, while in command of a section of tanks.

During the attack the tank in which he was became disabled by a direct hit near a German strong point in the Hindenburg Support Line, and at L34 a 3.6.,

Digitized by Google

which was holding up the attack, Captain Wain and one man were the only survivors and they were both seriously wounded. While the infantry were held up there, this officer, in spite of his wound, rushed from behind the tank in front of the enemy strong point, taking about half the garrison prisoners. Although his wounds were very serious, Captain Wain picked up a rifle and continued to fire at the retiring enemy until he received a fatal wound in the head. Though bleeding profusely from the first wound, this gallant officer refused the attention of stretcher bearers in order to carry on clearing the enemy out of the strong point.

It was due to this most gallant act by this officer that the infantry were able to advance.

LIEUTENANT CECIL HAROLD SEWELL, 3rd Battalion.

When in command of a section of Whippet (light) tanks in action in front of Fremicourt on the afternoon of August 29th, 1918, this officer displayed the greatest gallantry and initiative in getting out of his own tank and crossing open ground under heavy shell and machine-gun fire to rescue the crew of another Whippet of his section, which had side-slipped into a large shell hole, overturned and taken fire. The door of the tank having become jambed against the side of the shell hole, Lieutenant Sewell, by his own unaided efforts, dug away the entrance to the door and released the crew. In doing so he undoubtedly saved the lives of the officers and men inside the tank, as they could not have got out without his assistance.

After having extricated this crew, seeing one of his own crew lying wounded behind his tank, he again dashed across the open ground to his assistance. He was hit while doing so, but succeeded in reaching the tank, when a few minutes later he was again hit, fatally, in the act of dressing his wounded driver.

Digitized by Google

During the whole of this period he was in full view and short range of enemy machine guns and rifle pits, and throughout by his prompt and heroic action showed an utter disregard for his own personal safety.

CAPTAIN (A./LIEUT.-COLONEL) RICHARD ANNESLEY WEST, 6th Battalion. For most conspicuous bravery and brilliant leadership on August 21st, at Courcelles, and again for amazing self-sacrifice near Vaulx—Vraucourt on September 2nd, 1918.

On August 21st, during the attack on Courcelles, the infantry having lost their bearings in the dense fog, this officer at once took charge of any men he could find. He reorganized them and led them on horseback through the village on to their objective in face of heavy machine-gun fire. He had two horses shot from under him during the morning. Throughout the whole action he displayed the most utter disregard of danger, and the capture of the village was in a great part due to his initiative and gallantry.

On September 2nd, it was intended that a battalion of light tanks under the command of this officer should exploit the initial infantry and heavy tank attack. He therefore rode forward on horseback to our front infantry line in order to keep in touch with the progress of the battle and to be in a position to launch his tanks at the right moment. He arrived at the front line when the enemy were in process of delivering a local counter-attack. The infantry battalion had suffered heavy officer casualties, and its flanks were exposed. Realizing that there was a danger of the battalion giving way he at once rode out in front of them under extremely heavy machine-gun and rifle fire, and rallied the men. In spite of the fact that the enemy were close upon him, he took charge of the situation, and detailed non-commissioned officers to replace officer casualties. He then rode up and down in front

Digitized by Google

of them in face of certain death, encouraging the men and calling to them, " Stick it, men ; show them fight and for God's sake put up a good fight." He fell riddled by machine-gun bullets.

The magnificent bravery of this very gallant officer inspired the infantry. The hostile attack was defeated.

Summary of Awards Gained by the Royal Tank Corps, 1916–1918.

Officers.

V.C.	4
C.B.	1
C.M.G.	6
C.B.E.	2
O.B.E.	23
M.B.E.	1
Bar to D.S.O.	9
D.S.O.	73
M.C.	446
Brevet promotion	14
Legion D'Honneur	8
Croix de Guerre	26
Silver Medal of Italy	2
Chevalier Leopold	1
Belgian Croix de Guerre	3
Star of Rumania	4
Rising Sun of Japan	1

Other Ranks

M.C.	1
Bar to D.C.M.	1
D.C.M.	144
Bar to M.M.	23
M.M.	604
M.S.M.	106

Digitized by Google

Medaille Militaire	25
Medaille d'Honneur	10
Ordre de Leopold II	2
Decoration Militaire	6
Bronze Medal of Italy	6
Croix de V.M. Roumania	2
Croix de Guerre	35
Belgian Croix de Guerre	22

Army Order 868 of 1923.

GEORGE R.I.

Whereas we have noted with great satisfaction the splendid work that has been performed by Our Tank Corps during the Great War ;

Our Will and Pleasure is that the Corps shall enjoy the distinction of " Royal " and shall henceforth be known as Our " Royal Tank Corps."

Given at Our Court at St. James's this 18th day of October, 1923, in the 14th year of Our Reign.

By His Majesty's Command,

DERBY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

19

THE HISTORY
OF
THE GREEN HOWARDS

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF THE GREEN HOWARDS

A SERIES OF SHORT LECTURES

THE GREEN HOWARDS (ALEXANDRA, PRINCESS OF WALES'S OWN YORKSHIRE REGIMENT). [19]

Northumbrian Area.

The Cypher of H.R.H. Alexandra, Princess of Wales, in gold (thereon "Alexandra"), interlaced with the Dannebrog inscribed with the date 1875, and the whole surmounted by the Coronet of the Princess.

"Malplaquet," "Alma," "Inkerman," "Sevastopol," "Tirah," "Relief of Kimberley," "Paardeberg," "South Africa, 1899-1902," "Afghanistan, 1919."

The Great War—*24 Battalions.*—**"Ypres, 1914, '15, '17,"** "Langemarck, 1914, '17," "Gheluvelt," "Neuve Chapelle," "St. Julien," "Frezenberg," "Bellewaarde," "Aubers," "Festubert, 1915," **"Loos,"** **"Somme, 1916, '18,"** "Albert, 1916," "Bazentin," "Pozières," "Flers-Courcelette," "Morval," "Thiepval," "Le Transloy," "Ancre Heights," "Ancre, 1916," **"Arras, 1917, '18,"** "Scarpe, 1917, '18," **"Messines, 1917, '18,"** "Pilckem," "Menin Road," "Polygon Wood," "Broodseinde," "Poelcappelle," "Passchendaele," "Cambrai, 1917, '18," "St. Quentin," "Bapaume, 1918," "Rosières," "Lys," "Estaires," "Hazebrouck," "Kemmel," "Scherpenberg," "Aisne, 1918," "Drocourt-Quéant," "Hindenburg Line," "Canal du Nord," "Beaurevoir," "Selle," **"Valenciennes,"** **"Sambre," "France and Flanders, 1914-18,"** "Piave," **"Vittorio Veneto,"** "Italy, 1917-18," **"Suvla,"** "Landing at Suvla," "Scimitar Hill," "Gallipoli, 1915," "Egypt, 1916." "Archangel, 1918."

NOTE.—The Honours in black type are those borne on the Colours.

ALDERSHOT:
GALE & POLDEN LTD.

Digitized by Google

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN
BY GALE & POLDEN LTD., ALDERSHOT
1940

3,808-R. 8

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

No soldier's training can be said to be complete if it has not given him a strong feeling of *esprit de corps*. *Esprit de corps* can best be described as that appreciation of and sense of duty to the Regiment to which you belong which inspires you, at all times, in peace and war, on duty and off, to do your utmost to increase the honour which previous members of the Regiment have won for it, and to try, yourself, to win fresh honours for it and to assist your companions, officers, and barrack-room comrades in so doing. In order to be able to do this to the full, you must know what you have to live up to, that is, the past glories, traditions, and history of your Regiment. These short lectures are intended to give you a brief summary of all that is most noteworthy in the history of The Green Howards.

Between 1688, when the Regiment was first raised, and 1858, it consisted sometimes of one battalion and sometimes of two. The additional battalion was raised for some specific purpose on each occasion. After 1858, the Regiment was fixed as a two-battalion regiment and has remained so ever since.

These lectures are not intended to be notes on the history of either battalion as distinct from the other, but rather of the Regiment as a whole, the greatest importance being attached to showing how the various Battle Honours—which are carried on the Colours of both battalions alike—were won. To make the story of our Regimental History easier to follow, however, it will be found that the first five lectures deal mainly with the 1st Battalion and Lectures 6 and 7 with the 2nd Battalion. Lecture 8 deals briefly with the part played by the Regiment as a whole during the Great War of 1914-1918, while in Lecture 9, reference is made to our two Territorial battalions, the Depot, and the close connections which exist between the Green Howards and the North Riding of Yorkshire.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	3
HISTORY OF 1ST BATTALION.	
LECTURE No. 1 (1688 TO 1748)	7
LECTURE No. 2 (1748 TO 1820)	10
LECTURE No. 3 (1820 TO 1856)	12
LECTURE No. 4 (1856 TO 1899)	18
LECTURE No. 5 (1899 TO DATE)	21
HISTORY OF 2ND BATTALION.	
LECTURE No. 6 (1691 TO 1898)	25
LECTURE No. 7 (1899 TO DATE)	28
LECTURE No. 8 (THE GREAT WAR, 1914-18)	30
LECTURE No. 9 (THE REGIMENT AND THE COUNTY) ...	39
APPENDIX (V.Cs. WON IN THE GREAT WAR)	41

Digitized by Google

FOREWORD

THIS brief outline of the history of our Regiment is intended to furnish dates and places of some of the leading events. To those who wish to learn the fuller story, I would recommend Major M. L. Ferrar's admirable " Historical Record of The Green Howards, XIXth Regiment."

To you who have joined the Regiment, it must be your endeavour under all circumstances to do nothing to tarnish the good name of the splendid Regiment you belong to, and to prevent thoughtless comrades from bringing discredit on the reputation of The Green Howards to which it is our pride and privilege to belong.

EDWARD S. BULFIN, *General.*
Colonel of The Green Howards.

ALDERSHOT,
February 25th, 1930.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The Colours of the Regiment

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF THE GREEN HOWARDS

LECTURE No. 1 (1688 TO 1748).

In the year 1688 King James II sat upon the throne of England. He was a staunch, fanatical Roman Catholic, and his harsh rule drove the Protestants of England to invite William of Orange, a Protestant prince, to come over to England to assist in deposing James. His reward, if successful, was to be the throne.

William of Orange accordingly landed in Devonshire in November, 1688, with an armed force and large numbers of supporters flocked to join him, one of the chief of whom was Colonel Francis Luttrell, a man already well known as a politician and a soldier. William gave Colonel Luttrell a commission to raise a regiment of foot for his service against James. It was recruited by November 19th, and was left to hold Exeter while William and his main body advanced.

This regiment, the first raised in England in William's service, was later called the 19th Foot, and was the direct ancestor of the Regiment to which we now belong. It is interesting to remember that although it later became associated with Yorkshire as the county regiment, its birthplace was Exeter, and its ranks were originally filled with men of Devon and Somerset.

In 1691 the command of the Regiment fell to Colonel Erle. This officer had already raised a battalion of his own in 1689. This battalion became the second battalion of Luttrell's in 1691, and was disbanded six

Digitized by Google

years later. For the present, we will follow the history of the 1st Battalion only, which first saw active service in Flanders in 1692, and fought at Steinkerke and Landen.

It was in 1694 that a committee was appointed to fix the seniority of regiments in the Army, and it was then that we were placed nineteenth on the list in order of precedence.

In 1695 it was still fighting in Flanders under King William III and was present at the siege and capture of Namur, which at that time was considered to be the strongest fortified town in the world, and reputed to be quite impregnable.

Active service came again in 1702, when the Regiment took part in an unsuccessful expedition against Cadiz, which was chiefly remarkable for the hardships and sickness which the troops suffered. After leaving Cadiz, the Regiment, with several others, was sent on an expedition to Guadaloupe, where there was severe fighting. On returning from this expedition the following year, the Regiment was sent to Ireland, where it remained for two years.

The year 1707 again saw the Regiment on active service in Flanders in the campaigns of the Duke of Marlborough, where it won great glory at heavy cost, and in 1709 earned the first Battle Honour which we bear on our Colours—"Malplaquet"—the most costly of all the Duke's victories. The next year it played a very prominent part in the renowned siege and assault of Douai, where it sustained more casualties than any other regiment. The Regiment was recalled home in 1714 on the death of Queen Anne, and was employed on garrison duty in the north of England, but was sent to Ireland the following year.

In 1718 an expedition was organized against Vigo, in which the Regiment took part. The object of the expedition was to seize military stores intended for

Digitized by Google

use in an invasion of England by the King of Spain. It was a complete success; vast quantities of stores and arms were captured, and the King of Spain sued for peace. The Regiment on return from this expedition, was sent to Ireland, where it remained for a considerable time. In 1738 the command of the Regiment again became vacant, and was given to Colonel (later General) the Honourable Charles Howard, of whom more later.

In 1739 the Regiment moved to Scotland and returned to England two years later, when it was stationed at Colchester, only to return to Scotland the following year. This move was quickly followed by another to Flanders, where the English were supporting Austria against France and Bavaria. It was about this time that the Regiment became known as "The Green Howards." In those days a regiment was always known by the name of its Commanding Officer, and ours was known as "Howards." In this campaign, however, it was brigaded with another regiment also commanded by a Howard, and some distinction had to be made. As we wore green facings on our uniform, it was but natural that we should be called "The Green Howards" (while the other battalion was called "The Buff Howards," now "The Buffs"), a title which has survived unofficially until quite recently, when it was reinstated as our official name. It is worth noticing that the practice of calling regiments after their Commanding Officers still survives in some degree in the Indian Army, where we see Vaughan's Rifles, Napier's Rifles, and others called after late Commanding Officers.

In this campaign in Flanders the Regiment was constantly engaged up till the end of hostilities. The chief battles it took part in were Roucoux Lauffeldt and Fontenoy. At the last named battle the British infantry won undying fame for their steady advance over a wide open plain while a heavy fire was

Digitized by Google

poured on them from three sides. The Regiment was on the left of the first line and suffered very severely, as an historian writes :—" Fontenoy should be borne on the Colours of all who shared in the glory of that day." The Regiment continued to serve in Flanders with but one short break until 1748, when it returned home.

LECTURE No. 2 (1748 TO 1820).

In 1749 The Green Howards embarked on their first tour of foreign service as we know it now, and were stationed at Gibraltar. Their stay was, however, short, and they came home in 1752. In 1751 a Royal Warrant was issued establishing uniformity of clothing in the Army and abolishing the practice of calling regiments by their Commanding Officers' names. The Green Howards, therefore, became the 19th Regiment of Foot.

Ten years after this an expedition was organized against Belle Isle, a French island off the coast of Brittany. The 19th played a great part in this expedition, and led the assault on the cliffs and first established a footing on the island.

Another period of home service came before the Regiment was ordered to Gibraltar for the second time in 1763. About this time a Royal Warrant was issued fixing the facings as " deep green." When the Regiment returned from Gibraltar in 1771 it was stationed at Richmond, Surrey, moving later to Scotland, and then to Ireland.

While it was in Ireland (in 1775) the War of American Independence broke out, and in 1781, reinforcements being urgently needed, the 19th, with other regiments, crossed the Atlantic and saw heavy fighting in the closing stages of this campaign, winning special praise from their Brigadier for their good work. In 1782 the

Digitized by Google

Regiment first became associated with Yorkshire when its full title was fixed as " The 19th or First Yorkshire North Riding Regiment." The King issued a special wish that all should be done on both sides to cement attachment and friendship between the Regiment and the county.

In 1791 the Regiment returned home from the war in America after spending nine years in Jamaica on garrison duty.

In 1794, after three years at home, the Regiment took part in the relief of Ostend, which was beleaguered by the French. This campaign, in which the English and Dutch were vastly outnumbered by the French, terminated in the Battle of Tournai. It was said later that no campaign, except that of Napoleon against Moscow, entailed greater hardships on the troops engaged.

After this the Regiment was ordered to Ceylon in 1796. The journey was broken at Cape Town, there being no Suez Canal in those days, where five companies were landed to take part in the operations against the Dutch, who soon afterwards surrendered Cape Town. These five companies then rejoined the Headquarters in Ceylon. Here it was to remain, with brief periods in India, for twenty-four years, which cannot be passed over without some detailed account of its doings.

In 1799 the Regiment sent five companies to India to take part in the operations against Tippoo Sahib, a native ruler who was menacing the British power in India. After a desperate defence Seringapatam, his last refuge, was taken and Tippoo killed; the companies, however, arrived nine days after the fall of the fortress. Although Ceylon had been captured from the Dutch in 1796, it was soon found that they had only possessed the coastal region, while the interior, which was almost inaccessible, was under the sway of

Digitized by Google

the native King of Kandy. In 1803 the atrocities of this king led to a force, which included the 19th, being sent to his capital, where a treaty was arranged. When however, the small British force had been thus lulled into a feeling of security, it was suddenly surrounded by the king, and save for a few individuals, the whole detachment, including 178 officers and men of the 19th, were barbarously murdered; 150 of these men were in hospital at the time they were massacred. Only 20 men were fit for parade. The remainder of the Regiment speedily avenged this atrocity, and much dangerous and trying work was done during the operations which followed. But the treacherous natives paid the price of their misdeeds. In 1809 the Regiment went to India to take part in operations against the Rajah of Travancore, whose country was seized and he himself forced to submit to British rule. The Regiment then returned to Ceylon.

Although we had carefully respected the treaty made with the King of Kandy, his cruelty drove his subjects into rebellion in 1815, and a force was again despatched into the interior against him. Once again the Regiment had to traverse the wildest regions of the island to reach his capital, suffering every kind of hardship in so doing. The capital was at length reached, the King seized, and the country handed over to the British by an assembly of chiefs. Thus the whole island of Ceylon was added to the British Empire. After all these long and strenuous years abroad the Regiment returned home in 1820 and was stationed at Daventry.

LECTURE No. 3 (1820 TO 1856).

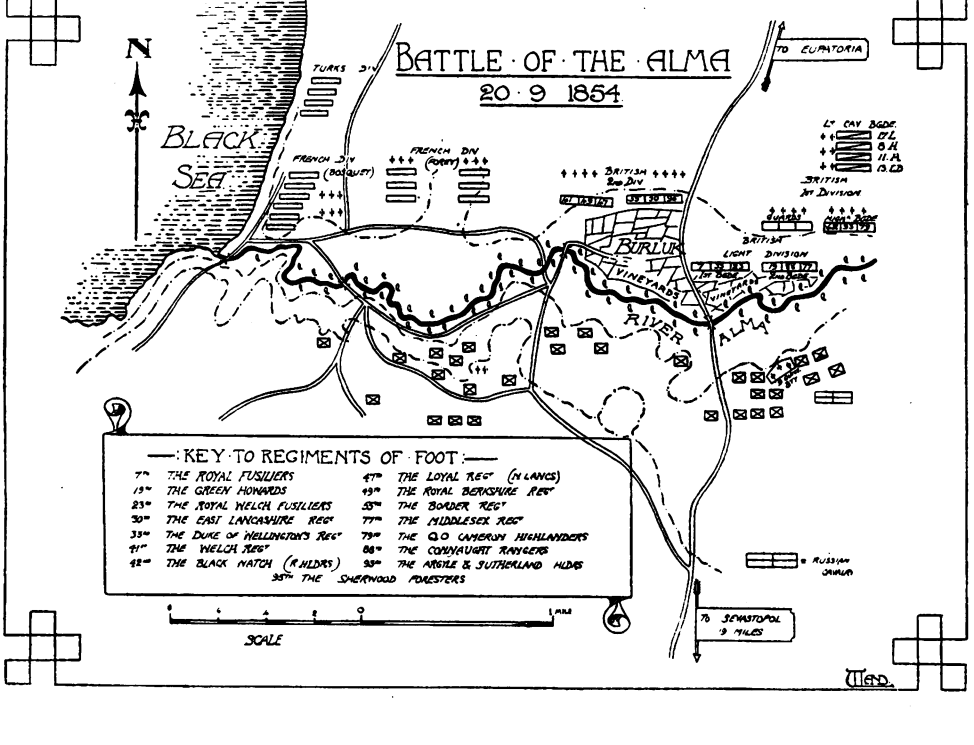
Before following the movements of the Regiment any farther, there are a few points of interior history

Digitized by Google

which are worth noticing. In 1797 the colonelcy of the Regiment fell vacant and was given to Major-General Sir Samuel Hulse, a very distinguished officer who later rose to the rank of Field-Marshal in the reign of William IV. The years 1802 and onward saw many changes in dress. Chevrons were introduced for non-commissioned officers—sergeant-majors wearing four, sergeants three, etc. The rank of colour-sergeant was instituted, the badge being a regimental colour supported by crossed swords worn above the chevron. Pig-tails were abolished, and an order issued that the hair would be worn short. In 1807 a clergyman invented fulminate powder which would explode when struck by any metal. This led to the introduction of percussion muskets which replaced the old flintlocks some thirty-five years later.

After the coronation of George IV the Regiment moved to Ireland, where it was employed in a part of the country described as " greatly disaffected," where murders, robberies and incendiarism were of frequent occurrence. All through this period of its service the Regiment continued to win the highest praise from all inspecting officers for its smartness, efficiency and splendid behaviour. In 1826 it moved to the West Indies, where it was employed on garrison duty for ten years, after which it was stationed in Malta, the Ionian Islands, the West Indies again, and Canada until 1851. While in Montreal in 1849, Private Baldock distinguished himself by showing great gallantry during a fire which broke out in St. Helen's garrison, by which he was the means of saving many lives. The Regiment returned home just in time to take part in the funeral of the Duke of Wellington. While quartered at the Tower of London, in 1854, war was declared on Russia, and the Regiment was ordered to Constantinople via Malta. Constantinople was reached on May 10th, and after a short stay there a move was made by sea to Varna on the Black Sea coast, where the Regiment

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

suffered badly from an outbreak of cholera. While there the Minie rifle was issued. From Varna a move was made in the autumn to the Crimea.

The Army landed at Old Fort on September 14th, two days later started its march towards Sevastopol, twenty-seven miles away, which was its objective. The first serious fight between the Allies and the Russians took place during the crossing of the Alma by the Allies on September 20th.

The Battle of the Alma is celebrated every year by the Green Howards, so it is important that every member of the Regiment should know something about this battle and the glorious part played in it by the Green Howards. On the night of September 19th the Allied Army had bivouacked between the Alma and Bulganak rivers. It was foggy on the morning of the 20th, and it was not till a breeze had sprung up that the Russian Army was seen to be drawn up on the high ground south of the Alma. This winding river, flowing westwards into the Black Sea, is fordable in most places and has steep banks lined with tall poplars. South of the river the ground rises sharply in a series of plateaux to a ridge about three hundred feet high. The Russians were holding this ridge in strength, and several formidable earthworks could be seen from the Allied lines, the largest being opposite the British front. But the road to Sevastopol ran that way. There was nothing to do but to attack and force the Russians out of their position.

The Allied Army consisted of the British 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 4th Divisions, the Light Division, and a Light Cavalry brigade; the French had two divisions and the Turks one. The Allied order of battle can be plainly seen from the plan opposite, the British being on the left. The Green Howards formed part of the 2nd Brigade of the Light Division. The Regiment

Digitized by Google

was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel R. Sanders, C.B.

When the British line was drawn up, the Light Division, who were composed of specially picked troops, were deployed in front. The enemy's fire was therefore concentrated chiefly on this division as they crossed the river and made their way through the vineyard up the slopes south of the Alma. The objective of the 19th was one of the most important points in the Russian position. It was known as the Great Redoubt, and consisted of a large, strongly fortified earthworks which contained a battery of fourteen guns. As they approached the Redoubt the 19th were counter-attacked, but with the assistance of the Grenadier Guards this counter-attack was held back. The Regiment pressed on and, in spite of a galling fire from the defenders, fought their way into the Redoubt. It was here that the five Russian drums, now in possession of our 1st Battalion, were captured.

The chief strong points in the Russian line were now in our hands, and the French had also succeeded in capturing the positions opposite them, and the whole Russian line fell back in disorder. One officer and 36 other ranks of the Regiment were killed in gaining this victory, and 5 officers and 196 other ranks wounded.

On September 23rd the armies advanced, and on the 25th the great flanking movement against Sevastopol commenced. The force being established in its siege positions, the first bombardment of Sevastopol was opened on October 17th, and continued until November 5th. Meanwhile, Balaclava had been fought, and the Russians concentrated 50,000 men to attack the British position on the plateau of Inkerman. This attack all but succeeded on account of mist and the great numbers of the enemy, but eventually, after eight hours' fighting, 8,000 British, reinforced late in the day by 6,000

Digitized by Google

French, beat back the onslaught. This won us the Battle Honour " Inkerman."

All this time the siege of Sevastopol went on through the bitterest of weather, entailing the greatest hardships for the troops. One great storm arose which sank most of the transports anchored in the bay, which were laden with warm clothing, supplies and comforts for the troops. Dysentery and scurvy and the constant fighting reduced the Regiment to pitiably weak condition, and although large drafts came in later, these were all composed of young soldiers who were practically recruits.

On April 9th, 1855, the second bombardment commenced. On the 13th Privates Calligan, Keating, and Evans won undying glory by volunteering to repair an embrasure under heavy fire. For his share in this Evans was later awarded the Victoria Cross, the first in the Regiment. On his death he left all his medals to the 1st Battalion. The siege wore on with sorties and minor attacks till June 6th, when the third bombardment was opened. On June 10th, Corporal Lyons won the Victoria Cross by picking up an enemy shell and hurling it from the trench before it exploded, therefore saving the lives of himself and his comrades. For this act he was also awarded the Legion of Honour. His medals are also with the 1st Battalion. On June 18th, the first assault on Sevastopol was delivered, but was a failure. In this the French were to commence by attacking a portion of the position, and when this was taken the main attack of the British was to be launched. The French attack succeeded, and the British got as far as gaining a footing in the enemy's works. Colonel Thomas Unett, C.B., commanding the 19th, was mortally wounded leading the Regiment. The British, who were unable to reorganize, and being under heavy flanking fire, were driven out of the position by an overwhelming counter-attack. The French, however, were able to hang on, and the

Digitized by Google

Russians, finding Sevastopol untenable, evacuated it on September 9th; this brought the war to a close. An armistice started in February, 1856, terminated in peace on March 30th. Nine non-commissioned officers and men received the French War Medal for this campaign, in addition to the British and Turkish medals issued to all. In June the Regiment returned home, landing at Portsmouth in July. Authority was given for "Alma," "Inkerman" and "Sevastopol" to be borne on the Colours, and to this day, war memorials in English and Russian, stand on the battle-fields of the Crimea to the memory of those who fell.

LECTURE No. 4 (1856 TO 1899).

In 1856 Queen Victoria inspected detachments of all regiments which had served in the Crimea and welcomed them home. The 19th, however, did not remain in England long, for the same year it was called to India to assist in quelling the Indian Mutiny. The fighting being over by the time the Regiment reached Calcutta, it was employed in garrison duties and in guarding mutiny prisoners, being split up in small detachments for a considerable period, during which it suffered greatly from sickness and heat stroke.

Its frequent changes of station entailed many inspections, at all of which the Regiment won unstinted praise from the inspecting officers. In 1868 the order came to take part in the Hazara Expedition against the tribes of the Black Mountain. This expedition, while entailing much hard work and many privations (as all the columns employed were marching light), did not lead to any very serious fighting. The expedition was withdrawn in October, its mission being accomplished. All troops who took part in it were awarded the Indian General Service Medal, with clasp, "North West Frontier." In 1871, after fourteen

Digitized by Google

years abroad, the Regiment was ordered home, and on arrival in England was employed in garrison duty. In 1873 the system of having brigade depots was introduced, and that of the 4th Brigade, which included the 19th, was established at Richmond, Yorks, the barracks being built some four years later. For the year 1872-73 the 19th was the best shooting regiment in the Army. In 1875 H.R.H. Alexandra, Princess of Wales presented the Regiment with new Colours to replace those which had been carried throughout the Crimean campaign. H.R.H. accepted the old Colours, which are at Sandringham to this day, and granted the Regiment the favour of being called in future "The Princess of Wales's Own." Hence the date 1875 on our cap badges. In 1877 the Regiment was again ordered on foreign service to Bermuda, and moved later to Nova Scotia.

Four years later the territorial system of classing regiments came in, and the 19th's official title became "The Princess of Wales's Own Yorkshire Regiment," with a white rose as its badge. Our march past, "The Bonnie English Rose," which had been in use since 1868, was sanctioned as the official regimental march.

In 1884 the Regiment moved to Malta. About this time General Gordon was besieged in Khartoum, and a further move was made to Alexandria to join a force being raised for his relief. Shortly after arrival in Alexandria, Gordon's fate became known, and Lord Wolseley decided on an autumn campaign up the Nile against the Mahdi, to avenge this loss. With this in view, a strong force was sent to Suakin to keep the communications open. This force, to which the Regiment had previously sent two officers and 60 men as mounted infantry, was engaged at Hasheen and other places, and was awarded the Egyptian War Medal with clasp "Suakin, 1885." Later the Regiment was ordered to Assuan, but the autumn campaign

Digitized by Google

up the Nile was cancelled. Later in the year, however, the Dervishes again became active, and the Regiment was ordered up the Nile to reinforce Wadi Halfa, which was reached on Christmas Day. On December 30th the Battle of Ginnis was fought, in which the Dervishes were broken. This battle is probably the last in which British troops fought in red coats. For this campaign the Egyptian War Medal and the Khedive's Bronze Star were awarded. The force was gradually withdrawn, and the Regiment again found itself at Assuan, where there were a number of deaths from heat apoplexy. Funerals were so numerous that the crape was never off the drums, and the order was given that the playing of the " Dead March " and the firing of volleys was to be discontinued in order not to depress the troops. 1887 saw the Regiment back in Alexandria. After moving to Cyprus, where it stayed for eighteen months, it arrived home in September, 1889. Its first home station was Portsmouth, where the 1st and 2nd Battalions met for the first time, the one returning from and the other going out on foreign service. From Portsmouth it was ordered to London, as a regiment in the London garrison had refused to turn out on parade on account of some alleged grievance. On completion of its duties there, for which it was thanked, it moved to Jersey, where the *Green Howards' Gazette* was started. This Gazette has been published since that date without a break. Subsequent moves saw the Regiment in Ireland, Gibraltar, and back in Yorkshire.

In 1899 the facings, which on the introduction of the territorial system in 1881, had been changed to white (a change regretted by all) were allowed to be altered back to the time-honoured green.

War broke out in South Africa on October 11th, 1899, and on November 17th, 1899, the Regiment was ordered to Aldershot to mobilize, and embarked at Southampton on November 23rd on s.s. *Doune Castle*, with Lieut.-Colonel H. Bowles in command.

Digitized by Google

LECTURE No. 5 (1899 TO DATE).

The Regiment landed at Cape Town on December 15th, 1899, and was railed to De Aar on the Mafeking line. There 3 officers and 130 other ranks were detached to form mounted infantry. On January 3rd, 1900, a further move was made by rail to Naauwport, and from there to the neighbourhood of Rensberg, where G.H.Q. was established. While in this district the Battalion formed detachments near Slingersfontein; one of these detachments, on New Zealand Hill, was attacked on January 15th, but the Boers were beaten off. About this time Lord Roberts took over supreme command and the force moved on towards the Modder River.

On February 15th a force, including the Yorkshire Regiment, entrained for Graspan, whence the advance commenced against Cronje, who was in position at Magersfontein. Cronje, however, did not wait to give battle, but, finding his flank threatened, withdrew to Paardeberg with the British in close pursuit. His position at Paardeberg was attacked on February 18th. The whole of the Boer force was situated on the north bank of the river, but it was thought that Cronje had pushed forward advanced positions on to the south bank. It was these supposed advanced positions that the Regiment was ordered to attack. The intervening ground offered no sort of facilities for this operation, as to the south of the river there was nothing but flat coverless veldt for some 1,500 yards. One party which succeeded in reaching the river bank discovered that Cronje had no positions on the south at all. Having found some scanty cover under the river bank, this party hung on until nightfall, there it was that Sergeant Atkinson won the Victoria Cross for repeatedly fetching water for wounded men; in so doing he was under constant and heavy fire at a range of about eighty yards and was mortally wounded. Lieut.-Colonel Bowles was also severely wounded, but rejoined later.

Digitized by Google

During the night the Battalion was withdrawn and on the following day was ordered to attack Kitchener's Kopje, a hill some two miles away on the south of the river. This first attack was unsuccessful, as Kitchener's Kopje was very strongly held. On February 21st, however, the Boers evacuated the hill and the Yorkshire Regiment occupied it.

Two days later, a detachment of Boers, under De Wet, who was attempting to reinforce Cronje, attacked Kitchener's Kopje from the south, but failed to capture it. This party of Boers subsequently surrendered.

The British force was delayed in this neighbourhood until March 7th, as a convoy of ten days' rations had been captured by Boers. Rations were accordingly cut down to two biscuits and half a pound of trek-ox per man per day.

On February 27th, however, Cronje, who had been completely surrounded by other columns, surrendered, and the road to Bloemfontein was open. The Boers made a stand at Driefontein on March 10th, but were beaten back, and Bloemfontein was entered a week later. Here Lord Roberts inspected the troops and especially commended the Yorkshire Regiment for defeating the Boer attack on Kitchener's Kopje, which had greatly hastened Cronje's surrender.

The force refitted, and on May 1st a general advance towards Pretoria started. After the prospect of several fights, which the Boers always avoided, Johannesburg surrendered, and on June 3rd, Pretoria, before which the Boers made a weak stand, was reached. Further advances entailed the fight at Diamond Hill just outside Pretoria, and the three days' Battle of Belfast, where bitter cold was experienced. Belfast completed the rout of the Boers, and the Battalion finished up at Nelspruit, having covered one thousand miles.

Digitized by Google

The war was over, but the Battalion was to remain in the country for a further eighteen months on piquet and blockhouse duty. About this time the title of the Regiment was again changed to "Alexandra, Princess of Wales's Own (Yorkshire Regiment)."

In September, 1902, the Battalion was entrained for Cape Town, embarked on the *Lake Michigan*, and landed at Southampton the following month. For its services in South Africa it was awarded the following Battle Honours :—

" South Africa, 1899-1902," " Relief of Kimberley," " Paardeberg."

After its arrival home the Battalion was placed on garrison duty in the north of England. The medals for the South African campaign were presented on the anniversary of Paardeberg. Men who had served with the Battalion from the start received the Queen's Medal with six clasps, and the King's Medal with two clasps, while those who had only seen the last eighteen months fighting received the Queen's Medal only. In 1904 the War Memorial in memory of those who had fallen was erected at York.

In 1905, the Battalion moved to Aldershot, where it excelled itself in the various army competitions, such as the Douglas Shield and the Evelyn Wood Cup, which latter it won in 1907. On October 30th of that year Queen Alexandra presented new Colours to the Battalion at Buckingham Palace. The following year saw the commencement of another tour of foreign service in Egypt, where the Battalion remained for four years, being stationed at Alexandria, Cairo and Khartoum. About this time the badge, which we had unofficially worn in its present form since 1881, was sanctioned as the official badge of the Regiment. It was designed by H.M. Queen Alexandra.

From Egypt the Battalion moved to India. When the War broke out they were stationed at Sialkot in

Digitized by Google

the Punjab. There were fifty Regular battalions stationed in India at that time, and most of them went to fight at one or other of the various fronts. However, it was necessary to keep a certain proportion in India both for the internal security of that country and to guard our long and difficult North-West Frontier. The 1st Battalion was one of those retained on this duty. They too, however, were destined to see fighting by 1919.

The strength of the Army in India had weakened, and the newly appointed Amir of Afghanistan decided that this was a suitable moment to stir up trouble on the Frontier. He had at his disposal a large army as well as the Frontier tribes, all armed and first-rate fighting men. In order to deal with him an expedition was sent into Afghanistan. The 1st Battalion formed part of the most northerly column of this expedition. This column advanced from Peshawar on 8th May, 1919, through the famous Khyber Pass to Dakka in Afghan territory. On the way they met with strong opposition. Dakka Hill had to be attacked and, when taken, held by strong piquets. On reaching Dakka the column halted, and the Battalion remained in that vicinity for several months, all through the hot weather in fact—and the weather in summer in Afghanistan is very hot indeed. During all the time they were there, there were constant skirmishes, snipers were continually active, there was much hard work and, in that climate, hardships, with many duties for the troops such as escort duties and piqueting the hills. In this work the Battalion did its part with great credit. Eventually the Afghans sued for peace, and the troops were withdrawn and the Battalion marched back to Peshawar, reaching that station on September 16th.

In 1914, General (then Major-General) Sir E. S. Bulfin, an old Green Howard, was appointed Colonel of the Regiment. It was largely due to his efforts that

Digitized by Google

we were allowed to resume as our official title our time-honoured name of The Green Howards.

The 1st Battalion arrived in England after eighteen years' service abroad, in January, 1926, and was stationed at Strensall, near York. The following January they were suddenly mobilized and sent off to Shanghai to take part with other troops in the protection of European and American interests in China. The Battalion left Shanghai in January, 1928, for England. Previous to embarkation a unique ceremony took place when the 4th Regiment of the United States Marine Corps presented the Battalion with a Drum-Major's baton as a token of the cordial relations which had existed between the two regiments, whilst forming part of the Shanghai Defence Force. During the voyage home the 1st and 2nd Battalions met for the second time in their history on the Suez Canal. The first occasion on which the two battalions met was at Portsmouth in 1899.

LECTURE No. 6 (1691 TO 1898).

When Colonel Erle was appointed to the command of the 19th Foot in 1691, the Battalion which he had already raised in 1689 became our 2nd Battalion. This Battalion saw much fighting under William of Orange in the Irish war, and played a leading part in the Battles of the Boyne and Aughrim. It was, however, disbanded in 1697 on the reduction of the Army.

Not until 1756 did we again have a second battalion; this, in its turn, lost its association with us two years later, and became a separate unit from which the 2nd Bn. Royal Berkshire Regiment is descended. A century then elapsed, during which the Regiment had one battalion only. In 1858, owing to the lack of troops during the Crimea and Indian Mutiny, all regiments

Digitized by Google

with numbers from 2 to 25 were augmented to two battalions. The depot at that time was at Chatham; 350 men were sent from there to Exeter to form the cadre of our new 2nd Battalion, which was to be commanded by Colonel Robert Warden. It thus came about that Exeter was the birthplace of both the 1st and 2nd Battalions, and each was at first largely composed of men of that county. After formation, the early moves of this Battalion took it to Plymouth, Portsmouth, Shorncliffe and Aldershot. While at Aldershot it received its Colours at the hands of Major-General Knollys in June, 1859. Two years later it crossed to Ireland, and was employed on garrison duty in various places. In 1863 orders for foreign service were received, and the Battalion embarked at Cork for Rangoon, where it arrived on December 15th. Later on it moved up the Irawadi into the interior. Its stay in Burma lasted until 1868, when it moved to Madras and again the following year to Calcutta. In 1871 the Snider rifle was issued. At this time the Battalion was stationed in and about Allahabad, where it suffered greatly from an outbreak of cholera. The Commander-in-Chief was greatly impressed by the admirable spirit displayed by the Battalion during this trying time, and issued an order placing his appreciation upon record. In 1876 orders for home were received, and the Battalion landed in England in January the following year, and was stationed in the Isle of Wight. Soon after its arrival there the Snider rifle was replaced by the Martini-Henry. In 1878 the Battalion moved to Aldershot and three years later to Ireland. While there it won the Inter-Regimental Rifle Cup.

1886 saw it in England again at Portsmouth and later back at Aldershot. Orders for India came in 1889, where the Battalion arrived in January, 1890, and proceeded to Bangalore. The following year it distinguished itself in the Madras Assault-at-Arms. About

Digitized by Google

this time the Battalion was sent to Burma to take part in an expedition against the Katchins. For this service the Indian General Service Medal was awarded. The Battalion remained in Burma for two or three years and was then moved to northern India. In 1893 the Martini-Henry rifle was withdrawn, and the Lee-Metford was issued. In 1897 the Tochi Valley Field Force was formed to avenge an attack by frontiersmen upon the escort of a civil officer at Maizar, an outrage which was followed by an outbreak at Malakand. The Battalion moved to Jellundur, where orders were received and preparations made for a punitive expedition against the tribesmen of the Tirah. After various approach marches, the force assembled at Khangabur on the River Khanki on October 25th, under the command of General Sir William Lockhart. The same day saw the opening action of the campaign. Detachments of the force were out foraging with covering parties in advance. The work being finished, the foragers returned to camp and the covering parties were withdrawn. The tribesmen, however, followed up the latter, keeping up a brisk fire, much of which took effect in the camp, where the Battalion had six casualties. On October 29th the advance into the interior of the Tirah began. The campaign cannot well be described without the help of good maps. It suffices to say that for the next six months, every sort of hardship and daily brushes with the enemy, such as only the North-West Frontier of India can provide, were the lot of the Battalion, and in this trying and exhausting work they won nothing but praise. Their accomplishments can perhaps be best summed up by quoting the complimentary order issued by General Lockhart when the force was disbanded, its work done :—

" The boast of the tribes was that no foreign army, Mogul, Afghan, Persian or British had ever penetrated or could ever penetrate their country. But, after

Digitized by Google

carrying three strong positions and being subsequently engaged in daily skirmishes, the troops succeeded in visiting every portion of the Tirah, a fact which will be kept alive in minds of future generations by ruined forts and towers in the remotest valleys."

For this campaign the Battle Honour " Tirah " was awarded, and the Indian General Service Medal with two clasps. " Punjab Frontier, 1897-1898," " Tirah, 1897-1898."

Numerous mentions in despatches and five Distinguished Conduct Medals were won. When the force broke up the Battalion moved back to Peshawar and later to Dagshai.

LECTURE No. 7 (1899 TO DATE).

After the 2nd Battalion returned from the Tirah expedition it sent drafts to the 1st in South Africa, and in 1902 moved to Delhi in time to take part in the great Durbar held on New Year's Day, 1903. A year later it moved to Bombay, and in 1906 embarked for Cape Town after sixteen years in India. On arrival in South Africa it was employed on garrison duty in various places. A representative detachment of the Battalion was present, in 1908, at the unveiling of the two Paardeberg memorials erected, one at Paardeberg and the other at Kitchener's Kopje, to the memory of their comrades in the 1st Battalion who had fallen in action there. In 1909 the Battalion moved home and was stationed at York. This was the first time it had been stationed in its own county. On Alma Day, 1909, The Green Howards Association was inaugurated at York.

On November 17th Queen Alexandra presented the Battalion with new Colours at Windsor Castle. The Battalion took part in the funeral of King Edward

Digitized by Google

VII, and subsequently moved to Ireland for manœuvres, after which it was stationed in York, moving later to Wales for manœuvres and then to Blackdown. In 1913 it was stationed in the Channel Islands (Guernsey and Alderney).

The exploits of the Battalion during the Great War will be dealt with in the following lecture. It is therefore proposed in this lecture to pass them over and to take up the story of the Battalion again after hostilities had ceased.

After the Armistice took place in November, 1918, the Battalion remained in France for some months eventually returning to England in June, 1919, and shortly afterwards being sent to Dublin where it absorbed the 3rd (Reserve) Battalion which was already stationed there. The Battalion remained in Ireland for over three years, taking its part in the disturbances which took place against the Sinn Feiners during those years in that country. It was stationed at various times at Tipperary, split into detachments in Limerick and Kerry. Its final station in the South of Ireland was at Ballincollig, near Cork. From this latter station, it was sent in 1922 to Ulster, where it was at Aldergrove, near Antrim, and in Belfast. Eventually, at the end of 1922, it was sent back to England and remained in Dover till September, 1925, when the Battalion commenced a tour of foreign service by embarking for Jamaica and Bermuda.

In 1927 the Battalion left the West Indies, proceeding to Egypt, and it was while it was stationed in that country that it was called out for service during the Palestine riots of 1929. At the end of this year the Battalion went to Shanghai moving again to India in 1931. While at Shanghai, the Battalion was called upon to find many escorts for boats sailing up the Yangtse, and when in India it also went down to Bombay in connection with the bad outbreak of rioting

Digitized by Google

between the Hindus and Mohammedans which occurred in May, 1932.

The Battalion during its tour of foreign service as we have recounted, already played a prominent part in the various duties of Imperial policing which fall to the lot of our Army abroad in times of peace.

LECTURE No. 8 (THE GREAT WAR, 1914 TO 1918).

It is not possible in these notes to give more than a brief outline of the doings of the Regiment in the Great War. During that time the armies of the Empire grew until they had reached a size never previously contemplated, till they embraced practically the whole manhood of the nation. In response to the demands made on it, the Regiment grew, too.

When the War started the Regiment had five battalions—the two Regular battalions, the 1st stationed at Sialkot in the Punjab, the 2nd in Guernsey in the Channel Islands, a third Special Reserve battalion with headquarters at Richmond, and the two Territorial battalions, headquarters at Northallerton and Scarborough. Before the War ended the Green Howards had raised twenty-four battalions. These were employed as follows :—1st, India ; 2nd, 4th and 5th France ; 6th, Gallipoli, France, Egypt and Russia ; 7th, France ; 8th and 9th, France and Italy ; 10th, France ; 12th, France ; 13th, France and Russia. The other battalions of the Regiment did valuable service in providing for home defence, relieving garrisons overseas and training drafts to keep the battalions on service up to strength.

In all, over 65,000 men enlisted in the Regiment during the War. Of these, 464 officers and 7,036

Digitized by Google

warrant officers, non-commissioned officers and men laid down their lives for their King and country; nearly 24,000 were wounded. The memory of our dead and of the sacrifice they made is kept alive by the memorial at the foot of the Barrack Hill in Richmond, and in addition their names are inscribed in the book kept in the Green Howard's Memorial Chapel in the Richmond Parish Church.

During the War twelve Victoria Crosses were won by the Regiment. The *Gazette* notices giving the circumstances under which this supreme award for valour was given are printed as an appendix to this book.

The Regiment was awarded fifty-six Battle Honours for the Great War. Ten of these, selected by the Regiment, are emblazoned on the King's Colour and are printed in black letters in the Army List. Notes on these, the major engagements in which the Regiment took part, follow in the last part of this lecture. But the reader should remember that, in reading them, he will get no picture of the War as a whole. It is a history of the Regiment that is being attempted, and as battalions of the Green Howards were split up in many divisions and fought on many fronts, their story inevitably lacks cohesion.

"Ypres, 1914, '15, '17."

YPRES, 1914.—The first Battle Honour to be won by the Regiment was won by the 2nd Battalion, at that time forming part of the 7th Division. When Antwerp fell, that Division, which had landed in Belgium at the beginning of October, barred the way by its occupation of defensive positions round Ypres, to the German advance on the channel ports. After several days of bitter fighting the Division was joined by the rest of the Expeditionary Force, but even then it could not be relieved as the Germans were continuing their

Digitized by Google

attacks. For thirty-four days of hard and continuous fighting the defenders hung grimly on to their positions until the German attacks at last died down. In this fighting the 2nd Battalion bore a prominent and glorious part, and it is their stand at the cross-roads of Gheluvelt that is commemorated in the 2nd Battalion war picture now hanging in the Officers' Mess of the Depot during the absence of the 2nd Battalion on foreign service.

YPRES, 1915.—This battle commenced on the 22nd April and went on to the 24th May. It started by the first German gas attack. Owing to the surprise and confusion caused by the use of this new weapon, the Germans gained an initial success and succeeded in bending back our line, but they were eventually stopped by the gallantry of our troops. Further bitter fighting took place, and many English counter-attacks were launched. Eventually, practically all the ground lost was re-won. Besides the 2nd Battalion, the 4th and 5th Territorial Army Battalions received their baptism of fire at this battle.

YPRES, 1917.—This battle, often known by the name of Passchendaele, was really a series of English attacks on the German positions to the north and east of Ypres. It was similar in plan to the Somme, except that the artillery bombardments were even more severe and the expenditure of ammunition more copious. Unfortunately the weather was very bad and the ground churned up by the incessant fire of the artillery, turned into a morass, greatly impeding the movements of the attackers. Still the British attacks went on, and the battle, starting on July 31st, lasted, in spite of the appalling weather, till November 10th. During that time 24,000 men and over seventy guns were captured. The 2nd, 4th, 5th, 6th, 8th, 9th and 10th Battalions of the Regiment took part in this battle which produced some of the bitterest fighting of the whole war.

Digitized by Google

"Loos."

This battle was fought in September, 1915, and was the first large-scale attack in the war by the British Army. The front German trenches were overrun, many Germans taken prisoners, but the objective, which was to break right through the German lines, was not attained. The 2nd and 8th Battalions of the Regiment took part in this battle.

"Somme, 1916, '18."

SOMME, 1916.—The Battle of the Somme began on July 1st, 1916, and lasted till the end of October. During all this time a series of heavy attacks were continuously made on the Germans by the British Army. Very bitter fighting took place, and the ground over which the battle was fought was reduced to an area of complete desolation. Both sides suffered heavy casualties, but it was these hammer blows, accompanied as they were by artillery bombardments much more severe than any which had ever taken place before, which first seriously shook the morale of the German Army and laid the foundation of our subsequent victories.

All the battalions of the Green Howards at that time serving in France took part in the battle, and among the many glorious actions fought, the two following are the most noteworthy :—

The capture of Montauban on July 1st, the first day of the offensive, by the 2nd Battalion ; the capture of this village marked the furthest advance made by any British troops that day. The capture of Contalmaison by the 8th and 9th Battalions on the 10th July. All previous attacks on this village had failed, but it was finally carried at the point of the bayonet by the 69th Brigade which included these two battalions of the Regiment. This brilliant feat of arms earned the special commendation of the Army Commander.

Digitized by Google

SOMME, 1918.—This Battle Honour commemorates the first of the great German offensives which started on March 21st, 1918. During the winter, 1917-1918, the Russians had made peace, and in consequence the Germans had been able to reinforce very largely the number of troops they had on the Western Front. With these troops they carried out a series of offensives. It was their last desperate effort to win the War before they should be defeated by the blockade and the growing strength of the American armies. The offensive failed largely owing to the stubborn defensive actions fought by the British Army, on whom the brunt of the blows fell. The 4th, 5th and 12th Battalions gained this Battle Honour.

" Arras, 1917, '18."

ARRAS, 1917.—This Battle Honour commemorates a series of attacks begun on April 5th and continuing through the month. The advances made by the British were quicker and gained at less cost than they had been the previous year on the Somme, and many German prisoners were taken, but again the ultimate objective, which was a complete break through the German lines, was not attained. The 2nd, 4th, 5th and 7th Battalions of the Regiment took part in this battle.

ARRAS, 1918.—This battle was fought at the end of August, and forms one of the stages in the Allied advance to final victory. During the course of it, the immensely strong German positions on the River Scarpe were brilliantly captured and overrun. It was the 2nd Battalion who gained this Battle Honour.

" Messines, 1917, '18."

MESSINES, 1917.—Was fought on the 7th June and subsequent days. This was an attack on a limited objective. It was preceded by the explosion of nineteen mines under the enemy's front line trenches and

Digitized by Google

by an artillery bombardment of great intensity. The attack was completely successful, ground to a depth of two miles and a width of ten miles was captured and many prisoners were taken. The 6th, 8th and 9th Battalions of the Regiment took part in the battle.

MESSINES, 1918.—This battle was fought on April 10th and subsequent days during the course of the German offensive on the Lys. This was the second great offensive launched by the Germans in the spring of 1918. Although the Germans gained both ground and prisoners, the offensive was on the whole a failure, and the heavy price the Germans had to pay for their successes was to cost them dearly later on. Messines was only captured after a most stubborn and gallant defence. The 4th, 5th and 12th Battalions took part in this battle.

"Valenciennes."

This Battle Honour was won for the Regiment by the 2nd Battalion. The fight lasted over the 1st and 2nd of November, 1918, and consisted of an operation to clear the enemy from Valenciennes before the Allies launched what proved to be their last great stroke on the Western Front.

For nearly three months the British Army had been pressing attack after attack with increasing vigour inspired by the hope of victory. In the two days' fighting which we are considering, the 2nd Battalion advanced through Artes. The Germans were driven back, and Valenciennes was entered once again by British soldiers.

"Sambre."

The Battle of the Sambre commenced on November 4th, 1918, and proved to be the last battle fought by the 2nd Battalion in the Great War. The 9th Battalion also took part in this fighting. On November 4th

Digitized by Google

the 2nd Battalion resumed their advance fresh from their success at Valenciennes, and the following day they assisted in capturing the village of Boisin. A further advance on the 6th brought them under heavy enemy machine-gun fire, casualties mounted and little progress was made. On the 7th, however, they were able to push forward once more, and that evening they were relieved by other troops and brought into reserve. On November 4th the 9th Battalion left billets in Pommereuil, crossed the Sambre Canal and that evening took up an outpost line with headquarters in a farm which had been the German artillery headquarters. One battery of 4.3 howitzers, one 8-inch howitzer and eight prisoners were captured. The next day they advanced again and took part in fighting near Maroilles. On November 7th the Battalion formed the advanced guard to their brigade and occupied the village of Martaix after a running fight with the enemy. The advance was then continued by other formations.

By November 11th the British line had passed from France into Belgium, and the ground where they had first stood to meet the enemy in 1914 was once more in their hands.

"France and Flanders, 1914-1918."

This Battle Honour commemorates the campaign on the Western Front during the World War. It was here that the Green Howards, represented by their 2nd Battalion, first met the enemy on October 14th, 1914.

Nine other battalions of the Regiment had fought beside them on this gigantic battlefield, which stretched from Switzerland to the North Sea.

It is indeed a Battle Honour which represents the part played by the Regiment as a whole in the most gigantic war which the British Army has ever fought.

Digitized by Google

"Vittorio Veneto."

When this battle was fought in October, 1918, the 8th Battalion of The Green Howards was serving with the British forces in Italy, and figured prominently in the fighting which took place. It resulted in a complete victory for the Allied force, the Austrians were completely routed, and within ten days of its commencement signed an armistice which brought the War to a close on this front.

The first tasks of our 8th Battalion, together with the remainder of their division, was to carry out the crossing of the River Piave. On October 26th the Battalion was ferried across to the island of Gravi di Papadopoli which lay in mid-stream. The boats were worked by Italian pontieri in the darkness of the night, across a ten-mile current under enemy harrassing fire. At 3 a.m. on October 27th the next stage of the advance began. Seven hundred yards of shoals and currents had still to be crossed before the far bank of the river was reached. Led in the darkness on compass bearings the men struggled against the swirling waters with linked arms emersed above their waists. Some men were swept away, others fell under the fire of the enemy guns and machine guns. Nevertheless, the deployment was made with precision in good time. At 6.45 a.m. our artillery opened fire, the battalion advanced with great determination and captured the first line of the enemy's trenches.

Four days of fighting in close country followed. During this period the Green Howards' battalion advanced steadily, till it was found that the enemy had taken up a position covering the crossing of the River Monticano, and opposite to where the Battalion last held an important bridge. On the 29th the Battalion launched a determined attack, and though the enemy were well supplied with machine guns at this point they gained the crossing, and were able to continue the advance.

Digitized by Google

The Victoria Cross was awarded to Sergeant McNally of the Battalion during this battle for his conspicuous bravery on October 27th and again on October 29th.

It must further be noted that General The Earl of Cavan, commanding the British Forces in Italy, makes special mention of the 8th Battalion in his despatch on the Battle of Vittorio Veneto in the following words: "The enemy had rapidly occupied the line of the River Monticano, and on this line he offered his last serious resistance. During the evening of the 29th of October and the morning of 30th October the passages were forced, and the enemy skilfully manœuvred out of the remainder of his defences chiefly by the very gallant work on the part of the 8th Bn. The Yorkshire Regiment. From this moment the retreat became a rout."

"Suvla."

This Battle Honour commemorates the landing carried out at Suvla Bay in Gallipoli on August 6th, 1915. The original landing at Gallipoli had taken place on April 25th, 1915, at Helles on the tip of the peninsula. In spite of great sacrifices, the troops had not been able to advance there far enough to win a decisive success, and it was decided to employ some of the new divisions which were coming out as reinforcements, to land at another place so as to take the enemy in flank. At the same time attacks were to be made from the positions at Anzac and Helles, which we already held.

Suvla Bay was the place selected for the new landing, and the 6th (Service) Battalion of The Green Howards, who had been raised since the beginning of the war, forming part of the 11th Division, were part of the troops ordered to effect the landing and capture the hills beyond.

On a pitch dark night, and in spite of every opposition, the landing was brilliantly carried out, the front

Digitized by Google

Turkish trenches were overrun and a secure footing gained on that portion of the coast.

Eventually, mainly owing to the difficulties of water supply and generally of maintaining the troops on the peninsula, Gallipoli was evacuated; but nothing can dim the glory of the great feats of arms that were performed there, and of these the landing at Suvla, carried out as it was by new troops undergoing their first baptism of fire, is one of the most outstanding. The losses of the 6th (Service) Battalion who won this Battle Honour for the Regiment were very severe. They amounted to sixteen officers and over two hundred other ranks.

LECTURE No. 9 (THE REGIMENT AND THE COUNTY).

Every Green Howard should realize the close connections which exist between their Regiment and their county—the North Riding of Yorkshire. It was in 1782 that an order was received from His Majesty the King that the 19th Regiment of Foot should take the county name of the 19th or 1st York North Riding Regiment, and be looked upon as attached to that division of the county. In 1873 brigade depots were formed, the 4th being at Richmond, Yorkshire, and allocated to the 19th Foot, together with the two Militia battalions of the district. From this date onwards the beautifully situated town on the Swale has been associated with the Depot of the Green Howards.

For many years the Depot at Richmond has been looked on as the permanent home of the Regiment, for while the Regular battalions move from one station to another, the Depot remains stationary. The staff is found by the two Regular battalions, and it is here that all young Green Howards start their military career and undergo a period of recruits training before being

Digitized by Google

drafted to the home battalion. It is to Richmond, also, that the majority return to take their discharge when their period of Colour service comes to an end.

Every year the Depot is the scene of an annual reunion of Old Comrades who come as members of the Green Howards Association. Here, in their regimental home, they discuss old times, and can visit the Regimental Museum, which contains many interesting records of the past.

The Great War Memorial at the top of Frenchgate, and the Regimental Chapel in the Parish Church, are outward signs of the close ties which link the Depot with the town of Richmond and the surrounding district.

The Depot further provides a link between the Regular and Territorial battalions of the Green Howards. The latter, situated as they are in the North Riding, provide perhaps the most important connection between the Regiment and its county, and no history, however short, would be complete without some mention of them. These Battalions, the 4th and 5th, were formed in 1907 and replaced the older Volunteers. During the Great War they bore their full share of the struggle, and added many pages of glorious deeds to the History of the Regiment. Some of these have been sketched briefly above.

The 4th Battalion took part in the Second and Third Battles of Ypres, the First and Second Battles of the Somme, the Battle of Arras, the Battle of the Lys and the Second Battle of the Aisne.

The 5th Battalion fought at Ypres in 1915 and 1917, the Somme in 1916 and 1918, the Battle of Arras, the Battle of the Scarpe and the Battle of the Aisne, 1918.

The 4th Battalion have their headquarters at Northallerton and the 5th Battalion at Scarborough, while both battalions have detachments in many other parts of the county.

Digitized by Google

Appendix.

THE VICTORIA CROSS.

The following Victoria Crosses were won by Green Howards during the Great War, 1914-1918 :—

No. 8191 Corporal William Anderson.
(2nd Battalion)

For conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty at Neuve Chapelle on the 12th March, 1915, when he led three men with bombs against a large party of the enemy who had entered our trenches, and by his prompt and determined action saved what might have otherwise become a serious situation. Corporal Anderson first threw his own bombs, then those in possession of his three men (who had been wounded), amongst the Germans; after which he opened rapid fire upon them with great effect, notwithstanding that he was at the time quite alone.—*London Gazette, 22nd May*, 1915.

2nd-Lieutenant Donald Simpson Bell.
(9th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery at Horseshoe Trench on 5th July, 1916. During an attack a very heavy enfilade fire was opened on the attacking company by an hostile machine gun. 2nd-Lieutenant Bell immediately, and on his own initiative, crept up a communication trench and then, followed by Corporal Colwill and Private Batey, rushed across the open under very heavy fire and attacked the machine gun, shooting the firer with his revolver and destroying gun and personnel with bombs.—*London Gazette, 9th September*, 1916.

Digitized by Google

Major Stewart Walter Loudoun Shand.
(10th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery near Fricourt on the 16th July, 1916. When his company attempted to climb over the parapet to attack the enemy's trenches they were met by very fierce machine-gun fire, which temporarily stopped their progress. Major Shand immediately leapt on the parapet, helped the men over it and encouraged them in every way until he fell mortally wounded. Even then he insisted on being propped up in the trench, and went on encouraging the non-commissioned officers and men until he died.—*London Gazette, 9th September,* 1916.

No. 12067 Private William Short.
(8th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery at Munster Alley on the 6th August, 1916. He was foremost in the attack, bombing the enemy with great gallantry, when he was severely wounded in the foot. He was urged to go back, but refused and continued to throw bombs. Later his leg was shattered by a shell and he was unable to stand, so that he lay in the trench adjusting detonators and straightening the pins of bombs for his comrades. He died before he could be carried out of the trench. For the last eleven months he had always volunteered for dangerous enterprises, and had always set a magnificent example of bravery and devotion to duty.—*London Gazette, 9th September,* 1916.

Captain Archie Cecil Thomas White, M.C.
(6th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery at Stuff Redoubt on the 27th September and the 1st October, 1916. He was in command of the troops that held the southern and western faces of a redoubt. For four days and

Digitized by Google

nights, by his indomitable spirit, great personal courage and skilful dispositions, he held his position under fire of all kinds and against several counter-attacks. Though short of supplies and ammunition, his determination never wavered. When the enemy attacked in greatly superior numbers and had almost ejected our troops from the redoubt, he personally led a counter-attack, which finally cleared the enemy out of the southern and western faces. He risked his life continually and was the life and soul of the defence.—*London Gazette, 26th October*, 1916.

Captain David Philip Hirsch.
(4th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in attack near Wancourt on the 23rd April, 1917. Having arrived at the first objective, Captain Hirsch, although twice wounded, returned over fire-swept slopes to satisfy himself that the defensive flank was being established. Machine-gun fire was so intense that it was necessary for him to be continuously up and down the line encouraging his men to dig and hold the position. He continued to encourage his men by standing on the parapet and steadying them in the face of machine-gun fire and counter-attack until he was killed. His conduct throughout was a magnificent example of the greatest devotion to duty.—*London Gazette, 14th June*, 1917.

No. 242697 Private Tom Dresser.
(7th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty near Roeux on the 12th May, 1917. Private Dresser, in spite of being twice wounded on the way, and suffering great pain, succeeded in conveying an important message from Battalion Headquarters to the front line of trenches, which he eventually reached in an

Digitized by Google

exhausted condition. His fearlessness and determination to deliver this message at any cost proved of the greatest value to his Battalion at a critical period.—*London Gazette, 27th June,* 1917.

No. 42537 Corporal William Clamp.
(6th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery near Poelcapelle on the 9th October, 1917, when an advance was being checked by intense machine-gun fire from concrete blockhouses and by snipers in ruined buildings, Corporal Clamp dashed forward with two men and attempted to rush the largest blockhouse. His first attempt failed, owing to the two men with him being knocked out, but he at once collected some bombs and, calling upon two men to follow him, again dashed forward. He was first to reach the blockhouse and hurled in the bombs, killing many of the occupants. He then entered and brought out a machine gun and about twenty prisoners, whom he brought back under heavy fire from neighbouring snipers. This non-commissioned officer then again went forward, encouraging and cheering the men and succeeded in rushing several snipers' posts. He continued to show the greatest heroism until he was killed by a sniper. His magnificent courage and self-sacrifice were of the greatest value and relieved what was undoubtedly a very critical situation.—*London Gazette, 18th December,* 1917.

Lieut.-Colonel Oliver Cyril Spencer Watson, D.S.O.

For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty at Rossignol Wood on the 28th March, 1918. His command was at a dangerous point, where continuous attacks were made by the enemy in order to pierce the line. A counter-attack had been made against the enemy position which at first achieved its object, but as they were holding out in two improvised strong

Digitized by Google

points, Lieutenant-Colonel Watson saw that immediate action was necessary, and he led his remaining small reserve to the attack, organising bombing parties and leading attacks under intense rifle and machine-gun fire. Outnumbered, he finally ordered his men to retire, remaining himself in a communication trench to cover the retirement, though he faced almost certain death by so doing. The assault he led was at a critical moment, and without a doubt saved the line. Both in the assault and covering his men's retirement, he held his life as nothing, and his splendid bravery inspired all troops in the vicinity to rise to the occasion and save a breach being made in a hardly tried and attenuated line. Lieutenant-Colonel Watson was killed while covering the withdrawal.—*London Gazette, 8th May,* 1918.

2nd-Lieutenant Ernest Frederick Beal.

(13th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery and determined leading at St. Leger on the 21st and 22nd March, 1918, when in command of a company detailed to occupy a certain section of a trench. When the company was established, it was found that a considerable gap of about four hundred yards existed between the left flank of the company and the neighbouring unit, and that this gap was strongly held by the enemy. It was of vital importance that this gap should be cleared, but no troops were then available. Organising a small party of less than a dozen men, he led them against the enemy. On reaching an enemy machine gun, 2nd-Lieutenant Beal immediately sprang forward and with his revolver killed the team and captured the gun. Continuing along the trench, he encountered and dealt with another machine gun in the same manner, and in all captured four enemy guns and inflicted severe casualties. Later in the evening, when a wounded man had been left in the open under heavy enemy fire, he, regardless of danger, walked up close to an

Digitized by Google

enemy machine gun and brought in the wounded man on his back. 2nd-Lieutenant Beal was killed by a shell on the following morning.—*London Gazette, 4th June,* 1918.

No. 9545 Private Henry Tandy, D.C.M., M.M.
(5th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery and initiative during the capture of a village and the crossings at Marcoing and the subsequent counter-attack on the 28th September, 1918. His platoon was held up by machine gun fire; he at once crawled forward, located the machine gun with a Lewis gun team and knocked it out. On arrival at the crossings, he restored the plank bridge under a hail of bullets, thus enabling the first crossing to be made at this vital spot. Later in the evening, during an attack, he, with eight comrades, was surrounded by an overwhelming number of Germans, and though the position was apparently hopeless, he led a bayonet charge through them, fighting so fiercely that thirty-seven of the enemy were driven into the hands of the remainder of his company. Although twice wounded, he refused to leave until the fight was won.—*London Gazette, 14th December,* 1918.

No. 13820 Sergeant William McNally, M.M.
(8th Battalion)

For most conspicuous bravery and skilful leading during the operations on the 27th October, 1918, across the Piave, when his company was most seriously hindered in its advance by heavy machine-gun fire from the vicinity of some buildings on a flank. Utterly regardless of personal safety, he rushed the machine-gun post single handed, killing the team and capturing the gun. Later at Vassola, on the 29th October, 1918, when his company, having crossed the Monticano River, came under heavy rifle fire and machine-gun

Digitized by Google

fire, Sergeant McNally immediately directed the fire of his platoon against the danger point, whilst he himself crept to the rear of the enemy's position. Realizing that a frontal attack would mean heavy losses, he, unaided, rushed the position, killing or putting to flight the garrison and capturing a machine gun. On the same day, when holding a newly-captured ditch, he was strongly counter-attacked from both flanks. By his coolness and skill in controlling the fire of his party he frustrated the attack, inflicting heavy casualties on the enemy. Throughout the whole of the operations his innumerable acts of gallantry set a high example to his men, and his leading was beyond all praise.—*London Gazette*, 14*th December*, 1918.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

5 87

OUTLINE HISTORY OF THE ROYAL IRISH FUSILIERS

(PRINCESS VICTORIA'S)

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The taking of the French Eagle at the Battle of Barrosa, March 5th, 1811.

Digitized by Google

OUTLINE HISTORY

OF

THE ROYAL IRISH FUSILIERS

(PRINCESS VICTORIA'S)

GALE & POLDEN, LTD.,
WELLINGTON WORKS, ALDERSHOT

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

BATTLE HONOURS.

Honour.	*Country.*	*Date.*	*By Whom Gained.*
Egypt	Egypt	1801	1st/89th.
Monte Video ...	South America ...	3/2/1807	1st/87th.
Talavera	Spain ...	27, 28/7/1809	2nd/87th.
Barrosa	Spain	5/3/1811	2nd/87th
Java	East Indies ...	1811	1st/89th.
Tarifa	Spain	31/12/1811	2nd/87th.
Vittoria	Spain	21/6/1813	2nd/87th.
Nivelle	France	10/11/1813	2nd/87th.
Niagara	North America ...	1813-14	2nd/89th.
Orthes	France	27/2/1814	2nd/87th.
Toulouse	France	10/4/1814	2nd/87th.
Peninsula	Spain	1809-14	2nd/87th.
Ava	Burma	1825-26	87th and 89th.
Sevastopol ...	Russia	1856	89th.
Tel-el-Kebir ...	Egypt	13/9/1882	1st Bn.
Egypt, 1882 ...	Egypt	1882	1st Bn.
Egypt, 1884 ...	Egypt	1884	2nd Bn.
Relief of Ladysmith	South Africa ...	27/2/1900	2nd Bn.
South Africa, 1899-1902	South Africa ...	1899-1902	1st and 2nd Bns.
Le Cateau	France	26/8/1914	1st Bn.
Retreat from Mons ...	France	Aug. and Sept., 1914	1st Bn.
Marne, 1914 ...	France	Sept., 1914	1st Bn.
Aisne, 1914	France	Sept., 1914	1st Bn.
Armentières, 1914 ...	France	Oct., 1914	1st Bn.
Ypres, 1915 ...	Belgium ...	Mar.-Oct., 1915	1st and 2nd Bns.
Ypres, 1917 ...	Belgium ...	June-Nov., 1917	1st, 7th/8th and 9th Bns.
Ypres, 1918 ...	Belgium ...	Mar.-April, 1918	1st and 9th Bns.
Gravenstafel ...	Belgium	23-26/4/1915	2nd Bn.
St. Julien	Belgium	25/4/1915	1st and 2nd Bns.
Frezenberg	Belgium	8-9/5/1915	1st and 2nd Bns.
Bellewaarde	Belgium	June, 1915	1st and 2nd Bns.
Somme, 1916 ...	France ...	July-Nov., 1916	1st, 7th, 8th and 9th Bns.
Somme, 1918 ...	France	Mar., 1918	1st, 7th/8th and 9th Bns.
Albert, 1916 ...	France	1-16/7/1916	1st and 9th Bns.
Guillemont	France	3-6/9/1916	7th and 8th Bns.
Ginchy	France	9/9/1916	7th and 8th Bns.
Le Transloy	France	Oct., 1916	1st Bn.
Arras, 1917 ...	France ...	April-May, 1917	1st Bn.
Scarpe, 1917 ...	France ...	9/4-14/5/1917	1st Bn.
Messines, 1917 ...	Belgium	June, 1917	7th, 8th and 9th Bns.
Messines, 1918 ...	Belgium	April, 1918	1st and 9th Bns.
Langemarck, 1917 ...	Belgium	June, 1917	7th/8th and 9th Bns.
Cambrai, 1917 ...	France	Nov., 1917	1st, 7th/8th and 9th Bns.
St. Quentin	France	Mar., 1918	1st, 7th/8th and 9th Bns.
Rosières	France	Mar., 1918	1st, 7th/8th and 9th Bns.
Lys	France	April, 1918	1st and 9th Bns.
Bailleul	France	15-30/4/1918	1st and 9th Bns.
Kemmel	Belgium	25/4/1918	1st and 9th Bns.
Courtrai	Belgium	Oct., 1918	1st and 9th Bns.
France and Flanders, 1914-1918	—	1914-18	1st, 2nd, 7th, 8th and 9th Bns.
Kosturino	Bulgaria	April, 1915	5th and 6th Bns.
Struma	Bulgaria and Greece	22/7/1917	2nd, 5th and 6th Bns.
Macedonia, 1915-17	Bulgaria, Greece and Serbia	1915-17	2nd, 5th and 6th Bns.
Suvla	Turkey	Aug., 1915	5th and 6th Bns.
Landing at Suvla ...	Turkey	7/8/1915	5th and 6th Bns.
Scimitar Hill ...	Turkey	7-12/8/1915	5th and 6th Bns.
Gallipoli, 1915 ...	Turkey	1915	5th and 6th Bns.
Gaza	Palestine ...	Oct.-Nov.,1917	2nd and 5th Bns.
Jerusalem	Palestine	Dec., 1917	2nd and 5th Bns.
Tell 'Asur	Palestine	19/2/1918	2nd and 5th Bns.
Megiddo	Palestine	—	2nd Bn.
Nablus	Palestine	21/9/1918	2nd Bn.
Palestine, 1917-18	Palestine	1917-18	2nd and 5th Bns.

Digitized by Google

" I must confess I do love to be on duty on any kind of service with the Irish. There is a promptness to obey, a hilarity, a cheerful obedience, and a willingness to act, which I have rarely met with in any other body of men ; but whether, in this particular case, those qualifications had been instilled into them by the rigid discipline of their corps, I know not, or whether these are characteristics of the Irish nation ; but I have also observed in that corps (I mean the 87th or Prince's Own Irish) a degree of liberality amongst the men I have never seen in any other corps—a willingness to share their crust and drop on service with their comrades, an indescribable cheerfulness in obliging and accommodating each other, and an anxiety to serve each other, and to hide each others faults. In that corps there was a unity I have never seen in any other ; and as for fighting they were very devils."

—*Memoirs of John Shipp.*
(Lieutenant, 87th Regiment, 1815–25.)

Digitized by Google

OUTLINE HISTORY
OF
THE ROYAL IRISH FUSILIERS
(PRINCESS VICTORIA'S)

IN 1793, a period of intense unrest in Europe, the British Army was augmented by the formation of many new regiments; of these the 87th and 89th form the subject of this book.

87th.—The 87th or Prince of Wales's Irish Regiment was raised by Lieut.-Colonel John Doyle, afterwards General Sir John Doyle, Bart., G.C.B., towards the end of 1793. The Regiment was quickly trained and sent to Flanders the following year and saw action for the first time at Alost in July.

The Spanish having joined the French against England, the 87th was sent as part of an expedition to the West Indies, where it assisted in the capture of Trinidad and the attack on Porto Rico, both Spanish possessions. 1796

On its return in 1804 a second battalion was formed.

1st/87th.—After two years' home service the 1st/87th sailed for South America and greatly distinguished itself at the capture of Monte Video and was present at Buenos Aires. The Spanish standard flying on the citadel of Monte Video is now a treasured possession of the Regiment.

In 1810 two expeditions were fitted out to take the Island of Mauritius. One from India, which included the 89th, arrived at its destination a few days before the second from the Cape with which was the 1st/87th.

Digitized by Google

On seeing the second force arrive the Governor of the Island capitulated.

The 1st/87th remained in garrison in Mauritius until ordered to India for active service in 1815, where, in the following year, it was one of the three British regiments taking part in the Gurkha War, our first mountain campaign in India. This little-known but most arduous campaign won them the public thanks of Sir David Ochterlony, commanding the expedition, and of the Commander-in-Chief.

The 87th being the only British regiment with the centre column always formed the advanced guard. The country was most precipitous and on one occasion the Light Company were drawn up by the officers' sashes. The Light Company were particularly prominent at Makwanpur, the chief engagement of the war, where they lost thirty men out of eighty.

The following year, 1817, the Regiment played a very prominent part in the capture of the Fortress of Hattrass and was engaged for the rest of the year in the operations against the Pindarees.

2nd/87th.—The 2nd Battalion, raised in 1804, was recruited in Counties Tipperary, Galway and Clare.

Napoleon, having subdued Germany and forced Russia to accede to his decrees, turned his attention to the subjugation of Spain and Portugal. In the summer of 1808 Portugal was cleared of the French by an army under Sir Arthur Wellesley, and in the autumn the offensive was taken by the advance of Sir John Moore into Spain. The 2nd/87th was among the troops sent to reinforce the army in Portugal.

It arrived in Lisbon in March, 1809, and in the same year fought at Casa des Salinas, and on the following day at the fiercely contested battle of Talavera, suffering over forty per cent. casualties.

After receiving fresh drafts it was reported again fit

Digitized by Google

for service and sent to Cadiz, then being besieged by a powerful French army under Marshal Soult. 1810

Next year a force including the 2nd/87th was embarked and sent by sea to Algeciras, with orders to march across country and attack the French in rear from the south. On 5th March, 1811, the Spaniards made a successful attack on the rear of the French, and General Graham was sent from the heights of Barrosa to secure the bridge across the Santi Petri River and thus keep the route to Cadiz open. While executing this order, Graham learnt that a strong French force had appeared and was attacking the heights of Barrosa. He immediately counter-marched through the thick woods which lay between him and the enemy. Emerging from the woods, the 2nd/87th, together with three companies of the Coldstream Guards, immediately charged the enemy to the battle cry of " Faugh-a-Ballagh " and decided the defeat of the French. It was during this charge that the Eagle of the 8th French Regiment was taken by Sergeant Masterson after Ensign Edward Keogh had been killed in the attempt. General Graham wrote to the Colonel : " Your regiment has covered itself with glory : too much cannot be done for it." In recognition of the Regiment's gallant conduct the Prince Regent ordered that its title in future should be the Prince of Wales' Own Irish Regiment, and that it should bear, as a badge of honour on the Regimental Colour and appointments, an Eagle with a wreath of Laurel, above the Harp, in addition to the Plume of the Prince of Wales.

In the same year the 2nd/87th was sent to Tarifa, which towards the end of December was invested by a strong French army. The walls were breached and the assault made on 31st December. The 2nd/87th, posted at the breach, bore the brunt of the attack and, encouraged by the Drums and Fifes playing " Patrick's Day " and " Garryowen," repulsed the onset of the French.

Digitized by Google

1812 The 2nd/87th were then ordered to join the Marquis of Wellington's main army. On the way to Madrid the Battalion displayed great gallantry when the advanced guard of Marshal Soult's army attacked the passage of the bridge and the Fort of Puente Larga.

The final stages of the Peninsular War commenced in 1813. On 21st June was fought the Battle of Vittoria ; here the 2nd/87th, forming part of the Third Division, nobly upheld its reputation in the complete rout of the French army, Marshal Jourdain's baton being acquired by a drummer of the Regiment.

Thereafter followed the pursuit of the French across the Pyrenees, during which the enemy turned and fought many times. In the course of these engagements the Battalion added to its reputation at Nivelle, where their attack on the fortified hill caused the Divisional Commander to exclaim : " Gallant 87th," and later at Orthes, Bigorre and Toulouse.

Returning home, the 2nd Battalion was disbanded on 1st February, 1817, 330 men transferring to the 1st/87th in India. In a letter of farewell General Gough wrote : " To gallantry in the field they have added the most essential requisite in a soldier, orderly and correct conduct in the garrison."

87th.—The years from 1817-1825 were spent in India. The chief recorded incidents during this time were the services of the Regiment in subduing fires. A bowl, given by Dr. McWhirter, whose house at Fort William in the vicinity of the dispensary was saved by the efforts of the men, is now in the Officers' Mess.

The Burmese War of 1825-1826 once more gave the 87th a chance of active service. In this campaign the enemy seldom stood their ground but erected in difficult positions stockades, which they abandoned when all was prepared for the attack. The climate was appalling and supplies bad, owing to the natives refusing to supply local produce. The 87th took part in the operations

Digitized by Google

during the advance to Prome, and on 19th January, 1826, together with the 89th, assisted in the capture of Melloone, and nine days after captured and destroyed the position of Moulmein.

The war ended on 21st February, 1826, and later the Battle Honour " Ava " was granted for the part the Regiment had taken in the campaign.

On 16th July, 1827, for its distinguished services in many parts of the world, the Regiment was granted the title The Prince of Wales' Own Irish Fusiliers, but this was altered on 17th November the same year to The Royal Irish Fusiliers.

In the course of the next thirty years the 87th served in many countries, and was in India at the time of the Indian Mutiny, during which it formed part of the Frontier Force, and was employed in disarming a large force of mutineers. Detachments captured large numbers of the 51st and 55th Native Infantry Regiments, while a company formed part of a force which moved into the Yusufzai country.

In 1860 the 87th received from Lady Canning, at Ambala, the Colours which were only replaced in 1937.

During the China War of 1860 the 87th were in Hong Kong. Though the Regiment did not go to the front as a unit, many men saw service and gained medals, of which several are now in the regimental collection.

89th.—The 89th was raised in 1793 by Colonel William Crosbie, later promoted Major-General, and the following year was sent to Flanders where, like the 87th, it first saw action at Alost. The expedition to Flanders was ill-fated and the 89th returned to England in 1795, reduced to a mere skeleton, but, on being sent over to Ireland, its ranks were soon filled and the Regiment reached a high state of efficiency. It was

Digitized by Google

sent to Bantry Bay to oppose a landing by the French in 1797. The French fleet was, however, destroyed and no fighting took place on land.

In the rebellion of 1798 the 89th was one of the corps employed in its suppression and was present at the Battle of Vinegar Hill.

In 1801 the 89th assisted at the blockade of La Valetta, Malta, until its surrender.

The Battle Honour "Sphinx," superscribed "Egypt," was earned in 1801, when a British army under Sir Ralph Abercrombie defeated the French at Alexandria. At this engagement the 89th gained distinction and later covered the advance of the main army on Cairo, which capitulated in June, the 89th being the first troops to enter the Citadel.

In 1802 Lord Blayney assumed command of the Regiment. An expedition to the continent under Lord Cathcart in 1805 encountered a violent storm in which the headquarter ship of the 89th was wrecked and many lives were lost, together with the Colours, band, mess plate and regimental books and papers.

1st/89th.—In 1810 a detachment of 300 rank and file was sent to Mauritius as part of a force co-operating with another from South Africa in the capture of the island. The good timing of the arrival of these two expeditions resulted in the surrender of the garrison.

The operations in Java in 1811 found a detachment of five companies of the 89th organized as a rifle battalion wearing green uniforms. This battalion led the advance at the Battle of Weltevreden and played an important and distinguished role in the capture of Fort Cornelis. The following year the detachment was employed in the expedition against Palembang, in the Island of Sumatra. General Sir Samuel Auchmuty at this time wrote: "Their conduct holds out to the

Digitized by Google

Army at large an example of zeal, gallantry, and subordination that has never been surpassed."

2nd/89th.—In 1804 a second battalion of the 89th was formed of men enlisted in Counties Wexford, Kilkenny, Waterford and Limerick, and in Limerick City. The Battalion served at home until sent to Canada towards the end of 1812. One company came under fire at Fort George on 24th August, and the Commander-in-Chief expressed his admiration of their conduct on this occasion in General Orders.

When the Americans attempted to cut off communication between Lower and Upper Canada by sending a strong force down the St. Lawrence River to attack Montreal, a small force, consisting of the 89th and 49th with some Militia and two guns, was sent as a corps of observation. Travelling by boats, and by executing an extraordinarily rapid march, this detachment of about eight hundred caught up the American forces at Chrystlers Farm on 11th November, 1813, and, inflicting a severe defeat upon them, forced them across the river and saved Montreal.

The 2nd/89th earned the admiration of the Lieutenant-General Commanding, for their steadiness and gallantry at Backrock (30th December, 1813), Lundy's Lane (26th July, 1814), where they lost 217 men out of 400 and gained the Battle Honour " Niagara," and at the investment of Fort Erie.

Returning home in 1815 the 2nd/89th was disbanded on 2nd November, 1816.

89th.—Serving in India, the 89th was employed in 1817-1819 in the war against the Mahrattas in the capture of native fortresses in the Bombay Presidency. The most important of these were Koaree, Indapore, Ryghur and Raree.

In the Burmese War the conditions were the same as

Digitized by Google

those encountered by the 87th. In spite of very heavy casualties from disease, the 89th carried out its duties and took part in the many attacks against stockades, notably at Kymendine, Merui and Donabew, during the advance to Prome. In the fighting round Prome and in the capture of Melloone, the 89th upheld the splendid record that it had already earned.

Returning home in 1831, after twenty-four years' service abroad, the Regiment spent most of the next two years at Devonport. It was during this time that Princess Victoria performed her first public ceremony—presenting Colours to the 89th on the Hoe at Plymouth, on 3rd August, 1833.

The years of peace which followed were spent in Ireland, the West Indies, Canada, England and again in Ireland.

From Cork the 89th sailed to the Crimea under the command of Colonel A. H. Ferryman. It landed at Balaclava on 17th December, 1854, and did duty in the trenches before Sevastopol until the fall of the fortress in September, 1855.

From the Crimea it was sent to the Cape, where an outbreak among the Kaffirs was expected. However, the arrival of a large body of troops in the country prevented open rupture with the Kaffirs, but the unsettled state of the population rendered escort and patrol duty necessary for nearly a year.

From the Cape the 89th was sent to India where it was employed in the suppression of the Mutiny in Rajputana. It remained in India till 1865, when it returned home and was stationed at Shorncliffe. On 5th April, 1866, Her Majesty Queen Victoria, at Aldershot, presented to the 89th a stand of Colours to replace those presented by her thirty-three years earlier.

Digitized by Google

THE ROYAL IRISH FUSILIERS (PRINCESS VICTORIA'S).

By the Cardwell reforms of 1881 a new system was introduced whereby two or more regiments were linked as the Regular battalions of a Territorial regiment, being supplemented by further battalions of Militia and Volunteers. A depot for the Regular battalions was permanently fixed in the area allotted to the Regiment.

The 87th was linked to the 89th, as Princess Victoria's (Royal Irish Fusiliers), with a recruiting area composed of Counties Armagh, Louth, Cavan and Monaghan. The depot was Armagh, which had originally been the depot of the 89th and 94th. Galway, the former depot of the 87th, and 88th became that of the Connaught Rangers (88th and 94th).

At the same time three Militia battalions were incorporated in the Regiment, the Armagh Militia as 3rd Battalion, the Cavans as 4th Battalion, and the Monaghans as 5th Battalion.

1st Battalion.—The Battalion was in General Graham's Brigade of the 1st Division in the Battle of Tel-el-Kebir. Landing at Ismailia on 23rd August, 1882, it was employed for some time unloading stores at the base. Not arriving with the main force until the afternoon of 12th September, after a tiring march, it formed up cheerfully at 11 p.m. and after an all-night march stormed and captured a strong enemy position at dawn—a record of twenty-four hours' marching and fighting in a tropical climate which can scarcely be surpassed.

Detachments of the Battalion took part in the Ashanti Expedition of 1895, the Rhodesian Expedition and the advance to and Battle of Omdurman, 5th September, 1898, where the machine gunners were specially mentioned for conspicuous gallantry.

The 1st Battalion displayed its worth in the first battle of the Boer War at Talana. It was then shut **1899**

Digitized by Google

up in Ladysmith, on the relief of which town, it was employed on blockhouse duty and as Mounted Infantry until the end of the war.

After the end of the South African War the 1st Battalion served at home until the outbreak of the Great War.

2nd Battalion.—On its way home in 1884 from India, the 2nd Battalion received orders at Aden to proceed to Suakin to join the expedition against Osman Digna, a subordinate of the Mahdi. It arrived on 19th February, but was sent round the coast to Trinkitat, and having disembarked, formed part of the column ordered to march on Tokar. The march had hardly commenced before a strongly entrenched position of the enemy was discovered. Here was fought on 29th February the Battle of El Teb. Tokar was occupied without resistance. The Regiment returned to Suakin to take part in another advance on a concentration of Arabs which included many refugees from El Teb and Tokar. On 13th March was fought the Battle of Tamai, in which the Arabs were completely routed. The Battalion embarked for home on 29th March.

On 3rd June, 1889, new Colours were for the third time presented to the 2nd Battalion by Queen Victoria in person, this time at Windsor.

On the outbreak of the South African War the 2nd Battalion left Cork for the front, and soon gained distinction at Pieters Hill. The Battle Honour " Relief of Ladysmith " was won by this Battalion.

After the campaign in South Africa the 2nd Battalion served in India until the outbreak of the Great War, when it sailed for England to form part of the 27th Division.

THE ARMAGH MILITIA.

The Armagh Militia was raised in 1793 as the 8th or Armagh Regiment of Militia. In 1855 it became the

Digitized by Google

75th or Armagh Light Infantry and again changed its title in 1881, when it became the 3rd Battalion The Royal Irish Fusiliers. Taking a prominent part in the Battle of Ballinamuck, it captured the Colour of the French 70th Demi-Brigade on 7th September, 1798. This was the only enemy Colour ever taken by a Militia Regiment in Ireland. During the Crimean War this battalion supplied a large draft for the 68th Foot (later the Durham Light Infantry).

During the Great War the 3rd Battalion supplied drafts of officers and men to the battalions at the front.

THE CAVAN MILITIA.

The Cavan Militia was raised in 1794 and was called the 101st or Cavan Regiment of Militia. It was continuously embodied from 1794 until 1816, except for a short period in 1802 and again in 1814. It was again embodied during the Crimean War. In 1881 the name of the Battalion was changed and it became the 4th Battalion The Royal Irish Fusiliers. In 1908 the Cavan Militia became a Special Reserve Battalion.

Mobilized in 1914, the 4th Battalion became a training centre and provided drafts for the Service Battalions.

THE MONAGHAN MILITIA.

The Monaghan Militia was raised in 1793 and in the year 1798 was engaged in the Battle of Ballynahinch. In 1802 it was disbanded, but was subsequently re-embodied in 1803. In 1881 the title of the Regiment was changed from the Monaghan Regiment of Militia to the 5th Battalion. The Royal Irish Fusiliers. During the South African War it was embodied from May to October, 1900, and stationed at Devonport. It was disbanded in 1908 under the Haldane Scheme of Army reform.

Digitized by Google

The Armagh and Cavan Militia still retain a place in the Army List as 3rd and 4th Battalions of the Regiment, but since 1919 have not been in existence except in name.

1910-1914.

In 1910 His Majesty King George V conferred upon the Regiment the honour of becoming its Colonel-in-Chief.

THE GREAT WAR, 1914-1918.

In the course of the Great War the Regiment expanded from four to fourteen battalions, of which some saw service on the Western Front, in Gallipoli, Macedonia, Egypt and Palestine, while one served in India.

The 1st Battalion left Shorncliffe in August with the 4th Division of the original British Expeditionary Force. It fought on 26th August at Le Cateau and shared in the Retreat from Mons, the Battle of the Marne and subsequent advance to the Aisne. Later it was in the van in the capture of Armentières, and in April, 1915, fought conspicuously in the Second Battle of Ypres, where it suffered severely at St. Julien and withstood two of the earliest gas attacks. In the Battle of the Somme it took part in the fighting near Beaumont-Hamel in July, and later at Lesboeufs in October. In April, 1917, the Battalion took part with the 4th Division in the Battle of Arras, up to then one of the most successful attacks of the war. In August, 1917, the Battalion was transferred to the 36th (Ulster) Division, in which it remained till the end of the war, fighting with distinction at the Battle of Cambrai in November, 1917. On the outbreak of the German offensive in March, 1918, the 1st Battalion was in the front line near St. Quentin and was reduced to a mere remnant, the

Digitized by Google

losses in the month being over 150, but by the 9th of the next month was again in action near Messines, where it was so far reduced in strength that the survivors were formed into one company attached for a time to the 9th Battalion. After being made up to strength the Battalion was constantly in action, mainly in the neighbourhood of Ypres, until the Armistice in November. The cadre of the Battalion returned to England in March, 1919. During the course of the war 1,058 men lost their lives while serving with the 1st Battalion.

The 2nd Battalion left India in 1914 and joined the 27th Division then newly formed at Winchester. On the Western Front in March, 1915, it gained great honour at St. Eloi and was the subject of a well-known war picture. Towards the end of 1915 it left France with the 27th Division for Salonika. On this front it was transferred to the 10th Division with which it took part in various actions in the Struma Valley. Leaving the Macedonian Front for Palestine, it fought in the Third Battle of Gaza and in the subsequent heavy fighting beyond Jerusalem.

At the conclusion of hostilities the Battalion was moved to Egypt, whence its cadre sailed for England in the beginning of 1919.

The 5th and 6th Battalions were specially raised for the duration of the war and formed part of the 10th (Irish) Division. The 5th Battalion was raised early in August, 1914, was able in less than a month to provide the nucleus of the 6th Battalion, and at the end of September found a draft of 500 men to form the basis of the 7th Battalion. In August, 1915, the 5th and 6th Battalions took part, with the 10th Division, in the landing at Suvla Bay on the Gallipoli Peninsula, and in the subsequent heavy fighting. The 31st Brigade, to which these battalions belonged, did particularly well at Chocolate Hill. Later they were

Digitized by Google

transferred to Macedonia, where they suffered severely from the hardships of that campaign. In November, 1916, the two Battalions were amalgamated into one, the 5th/6th, which was in September, 1917, transferred to Palestine. Here they were heavily engaged in the Battles of Beersheba and Gaza, the capture of Jerusalem and the heavy fighting in early 1918. In May, 1918, the Battalion was moved to the Western Front, where it remained until the Armistice.

The 7th and 8th Battalions, formed in September, 1914, did not go to the front till early 1916, when they sailed with the 16th (Irish) Division for France. Engaged in the Battle of the Somme, such heavy casualties were suffered at the attack on Ginchy that the Battalions were amalgamated into one—the 7th/8th. It was continually in action for the rest of the war, notably at the Third Battle of Ypres, where it suffered heavy casualties, and at Cambrai in 1917, and during the German offensive of March, 1918.

The 9th Battalion was formed in September, 1914, as part of the 36th (Ulster) Division, and proceeded to France in October, 1915. On 1st July, 1916, the first day of the Battle of the Somme, this Battalion attacked Hamel. It penetrated deeply into the German lines, but the failure of the attacks of the divisions on the right and left caused terrible casualties, the Battalion losing no fewer than 240 men killed. Later it took part with the 36th Division in the Battles of Messines (1917), Third Ypres (1917), Cambrai (1917), St. Quentin, Lys, Kemmel and Courtrai (1918). In 1917 it received drafts from the North Irish Horse, and was known as the 9th (N.I.H.) Battalion The Royal Irish Fusiliers. At one time in 1918 the survivors of the 1st Battalion were attached to it as a company.

The 11th Battalion went to France in 1917, but had only a short independent existence before being absorbed into the 5th Battalion.

Digitized by Google

The 3rd (Armagh), 4th (Cavans) and 10th Battalions were home defence and draft-finding units and never went overseas.

The 1st Garrison Battalion was formed in September, 1915, and served in India (1916) and Burma (1917).

The 2nd Garrison Battalion was formed in Dublin in 1915 and sailed for Salonika in August, 1916. It remained on the Macedonian Front until 1918, and for some months did duty as a front-line unit.

The 3rd (Reserve) Garrison Battalion never went overseas, but was employed to find drafts for other garrison battalions.

1919-1922.

At the conclusion of the Great War all Battalions other than the 1st and 2nd were disbanded.

The 1st Battalion was re-formed at Gosport early in 1919, and went abroad in September to North-West Persia, where detachments were engaged against Bolshevist forces. In August, 1920, on the outbreak of the rising in Iraq, the Battalion was transferred to that country and was engaged in various operations against Arab and Kurdish tribesmen. It left for Egypt in 1921, where it remained only a few months before sailing for England under orders for disbandment.

The 2nd Battalion was re-formed early in 1919 at Eastchurch, whence it moved to Chatham and finally to Dover.

In 1922, on the establishment of the Irish Free State, and owing to the need for economy, the majority of the Irish infantry regiments were ordered to be disbanded. Both Battalions of The Royal Irish Fusiliers were

Digitized by Google

originally included in this order ; but this was happily reversed, and thanks to the action of The Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers in offering to sacrifice one battalion, the Regiment preserved its identity as one battalion linked to The Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, the Depot moving to Omagh.

1922-1937.

The 1st and 2nd Battalions were amalgamated in 1922 at Dover, where the reconstituted battalion remained till the beginning of 1925. During this period it had a distinguished record in sport and athletics.

From 1925 to 1927 the Battalion was in Egypt, for one year at Ismailia and later at Kasr-el-Nil, Cairo. Moving to India in 1928, it spent four years at Agra, and went to Bombay and Deolali in 1931. During the Bombay riots in May and June, 1932, it earned the thanks of the Governor and Council of the Bombay Presidency.

On leaving India in 1933 the Battalion spent one year in the Sudan, with one company detached at Cyprus, before returning to England in 1934, to be stationed at Bordon.

In the autumn of 1936 the Battalion with the rest of the 1st Division left England for Palestine, where it was engaged for some months in the restoration of order.

In March, 1937, an announcement was made of the intention to restore second battalions to The Royal Inniskilling and The Royal Irish Fusiliers. The 2nd Battalion of The Royal Irish Fusiliers was reconstituted during the summer in Aldershot, in preparation for a move to Malta at the beginning of 1938, while the 1st Battalion remained at Bordon, where it was joined by the Depot temporarily, pending its eventual re-establishment in Ireland.

Digitized by Google

NAMES WHICH IRISH FUSILIERS SHOULD REMEMBER.

General Sir John Doyle.

As Lieutenant-Colonel, raised the 87th in 1793. He was the first man of the Regiment to be wounded—at Alost in July, 1794. He became Colonel of the 87th in 1796, was promoted Brigadier-General in 1797 and took part in the Egyptian Campaign of 1801. He was promoted Major-General in 1802 and was made Lieutenant-Governor of Guernsey. In 1805 he was created a Baronet, promoted Lieutenant-General in 1808 and General in 1818. He died in 1834.

Major-General William Crosbie.

Raised the 89th in 1793 and left the Regiment in 1795.

Major-General Lord Blayney.

Joined the 89th with the rank of Major in 1793 and became Lieutenant-Colonel in 1798. It was during this officer's period of command that the 89th obtained the nickname of "Blaney's Bloodhounds." He remained in the Regiment until 1814, but being promoted Major-General, he handed over the actual command to his successor, Colonel Garden, in 1810.

Field-Marshal Lord Gough.

Commanded the 2nd/87th during the Peninsular War. His leadership was outstanding throughout the campaign. He was promoted Lieutenant-Colonel after the Battle of Barrosa. Later he became famous for his victories in China and India, in both of which places he was General Officer Commanding-in-Chief.

He became Colonel of the Regiment in 1841 and died in 1869.

Digitized by Google

Ensign E. Keogh.

Was killed in attempting to capture the Eagle of the 8th French Regiment at the Battle of Barrosa.

Sergeant Patrick Masterson.

Seized and kept possession of the Eagle of the 8th French Regiment at the Battle of Barrosa. For this he was given a commission. The last of his line served for twelve years in the Royal Irish Fusiliers and rose to the rank of Colour-Sergeant. He was then given his commission in the Devonshire Regiment and gained the V.C. in the South African War. He subsequently reached the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel.

Quartermaster-Sergeant William Grady.

Was the first man to enlist into the 87th. On 4th July, 1807, the day before the assault on Buenos Aires, he was left in charge of the regimental baggage with about twenty sick men as escort. Attacked by a fully armed party of the enemy consisting of two officers and seventy men, he took prisoner the whole party.

Private Grenadier James Geraghty.

In 1812, during the Peninsular War, while the 87th were sitting down during a short halt on the side of a steep hill, the enemy opened fire on them. A howitzer shell alighted in the centre of one of the companies. James Geraghty shouted out that "he would show them how they played football in Limerick," and kicked the shell over the edge of the hill; the moment it landed it exploded without injuring a man of the Regiment.

Private Robert Morrow.

Was awarded the V.C. when serving with the 1st Battalion for "most conspicuous bravery" near Messines on 12th April, 1915, when he rescued and carried successively to places of comparative safety, several men who had been buried in the debris of trenches wrecked by shell fire.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant G. St. G. S. Cather (9th Battalion).

Was awarded the V.C. for "most conspicuous bravery." From 7 p.m. (1st July, 1916) till midnight he searched No Man's Land and brought in three wounded men and gave water to others, arranging for their removal later. Finally, at 10.30 a.m., he took out water to another man and was proceeding farther on when he was himself killed. All this was carried out in full view of the enemy and under direct machine-gun fire and intermittent artillery fire. He gave a splendid example of courage and self-sacrifice.

Brigadier-General R. G. Shuter.

Was in command of the 2nd Battalion in 1922 when the Regiment was threatened with disbandment. His untiring work in collating facts and submitting them to the proper quarters was largely instrumental in preserving the Regiment's identity in one battalion.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Private, 87th Foot, 1793.

Private, 89th Foot, 1793

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY

OF

THE BORDER REGIMENT

5th EDITION

ALDERSHOT
GALE & POLDEN, LTD., WELLINGTON WORKS
Also at LONDON and PORTSMOUTH

Digitized by Google

ALDERSHOT
PRINTED BY GALE & POLDEN, LTD.
WELLINGTON WORKS

1938

P 7488

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE BORDER REGIMENT, 1914

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY
OF
THE BORDER REGIMENT

FOR two hundred and twenty years the Border Regiment, composed of the old 34th and 55th Regiments of Foot, has rendered devoted service to King and country, as its long roll of battle honours and distinctions won in many parts of the world testify. Recruited from the sturdy men of the northern Border, the Regiment has exhibited the highest degree of courage and endurance on many a fiercely contested battlefield. In its long and honourable career it has gathered several distinctions unique in the British Army, in situations needing exceptional valour, and its conduct has shed lustre on the good name of the counties of Cumberland and Westmorland, with which it has been so long associated. The Regiment can trace its history back to 1702, when the 34th Foot, now the 1st Battalion, was raised by Lord Lucas, then Lieutenant of the Tower of London, soon after Queen Anne ascended the throne.

The men were mostly recruited from the Eastern counties, and the first duty that fell to it was to garrison the Tower of London, followed by a spell of similar duty at Dover Castle. The strength of the Regiment was fixed at twelve companies, each of three officers and sixty-six rank and file. For two years the Regiment remained in the South of England, and was then moved to Carlisle, the beginning of an association that was destined to become happily permanent. After a year spent in the capital town of Cumberland, the 34th was

Digitized by Google

in 1705 dispatched to Spain for its first spell of active service, and it early exhibited that fine degree of courage which has ever since characterized the Regiment. Few regiments in the British Army experienced more arduous or varied service during the succeeding fifty years. It was seldom for long out of action, and it fought and suffered with heroism and fortitude in many a fierce battle. One of its earliest exploits is indicative of the fine military spirit which even in those days permeated all ranks. Lord Peterborough, who commanded the British troops in Spain, whose eccentric genius led to a series of brilliant exploits, determined to attack the important seaport of Barcelona, which was defended by a chain of forts. The strongest of these was Montjuich, which was stormed with such irresistible determination by a portion of the British force that it was captured with small loss. This led to the surrender of Barcelona to the British. The Grenadiers of the 34th took a prominent part in the storming of Montjuich.

After the occupation of Barcelona, the 34th was sent to Tortosa, a town 120 miles away, for garrison duty, where it was when a large French force suddenly marched on Barcelona. To help defend the town against this attack, the 34th was mounted on mules, and made the journey of 120 miles in two days arriving just in time to take a prominent part in repulsing a strong attack by the enemy, two hours after reaching their allotted place on the walls. After a month's fighting, the French retreated, leaving over two hundred guns and a vast quantity of warlike stores behind. The Regiment suffered many casualties in the defence. A good many of the 34th were afterwards selected for transfer to a mounted corps, the remainder of the Regiment being sent home in 1707 to be recruited up to strength again.

The following year the Regiment was in France and Belgium, being engaged in the operations covering the siege of Lille, and under the Duke of Marlborough took part in the siege of Douai, where 130 of the Regiment were killed or wounded. In the following years the

Digitized by Google

34th fought with signal courage in the sieges of Bethune, Aire, St. Venant, and Bouchain. After the Peace of Utrecht, the 34th was sent home in 1713, and was for two years in a moribund state.

The rebellion in Scotland in 1715 brought the Regiment to life again, and three years later it was again on active service on the coast of Spain, sharing in the brief but brilliant Vigo Expedition and the capture of St. Sebastian. When France and Spain combined to besiege the fortress of Gibraltar, the 34th was among the first reinforcements to be sent to the Rock in 1727, and shared in its gallant and successful defence against the combined French and Spanish naval and military forces. The Regiment suffered severe losses, for on the voyage out two whole companies were lost by shipwreck in a storm. When the enemy forces finally retired from the siege, baffled by the courage and determination of the undaunted garrison, the 34th Regiment returned home.

A period of service in Jamaica and as Marines on board the Channel Fleet preceded its next spell of active service. It went to Flanders in 1742, and won one of its most cherished distinctions—namely, the laurel wreath which still figures on the regimental colours and in the regimental badge. This honour was awarded to the Regiment for its splendid bearing at the Battle of Fontenoy, May 11th, 1745. In that historical battle, so near to a brilliant victory for the British Army, and yet so near to becoming an overwhelming disaster, the 34th took a conspicuous part. The British infantry attacked with such determination that they broke the French line, but the Dutch troops, operating with the British, utterly failed through hesitation in the part assigned to them. The result was, the French, who were on the point of beating a precipitous retreat, were able to concentrate their whole forces against the British, who were consequently greatly outnumbered and compelled to retire. The French were able to turn all their guns on the British column as it retired, and terrible

Digitized by Google

losses were inflicted. The 34th was one of the two infantry regiments detailed to cover the retirement, and so resolutely did it face the enemy that the British force was able to extricate itself from a situation of the greatest peril when disaster seemed certain.

Trouble in Scotland called the Regiment home, and it took part in the Battles of Falkirk and Culloden, which finally quelled the Scottish rebellion. It is of peculiar interest that both the Cumberland and Westmorland regiments of militia were engaged in suppressing the Scottish rebellion, and rendered particularly valuable service, having many personal wrongs to avenge from Border raids. A period of service at home and in Minorca followed.

It was at this period, 1755, that the 55th Regiment of Foot was raised in Scotland. It was first numbered the 57th Foot, and was formed at Stirling. In the following year it was sent to the West of Ireland, where it was put through a very thorough preparation for the conquest of Canada, then in the hands of the French. The next few years were very strenuous for the 34th and 55th Regiments, both being almost continuously on active service. The 34th was one of the four regiments which, under General Blakeney, won undying fame in the defence of Fort St. Philip on the island of Minorca in 1756. The enemy mustered over 20,000, whilst the British defending the crumbling ruins of the old fort did not number many more than 3,000. Disease broke out among the defenders, and before a month was gone more than half the garrison were unable to do duty. Yet the courage of the garrison never diminished, even the sick crawling to the walls to help repulse the enemy attacks. It was not until the gallant garrison had been reduced by death, wounds, and disease to less than a quarter of its original strength, and nearly all the ammunition had been expended, that General Blakeney capitulated. The French General was so much impressed by the gallantry of the defenders that he allowed them to march out with all the honours of

Digitized by Google

war, with fixed bayonets and colours flying. The Regiment went to Gibraltar and thence to England, being given a great public welcome in honour of the share it had taken in the gallant defence of St. Philip. It was not long at home, for in 1758 it was in Brittany as part of the British force landed to attack St. Malo and Cherbourg, the capture of the latter port, harbour, and arsenal being a specially brilliant affair, in which a very large quantity of stores was destroyed and guns captured.

In the meantime the 55th Regiment had been winning equal fame in Canada. It shared in the first desperate attack on the fort of Ticonderoga, launched without waiting for the arrival of the necessary artillery. More than half the attacking force was killed or wounded in four hours. The attack had to be abandoned for the time, but the following year the British force returned, and, aided by their guns, attacked with such success that the fort was captured with the loss only of 17 killed and 50 wounded. The 55th took a full share in the whole campaign in Canada in 1759-60, which ended in the French being everywhere defeated and Canada being placed permanently under British rule. In the course of the campaign, a small detachment of the Regiment successfully defended Fort Detroit for eighteen months against a horde of Redskins who completely besieged them—another instance of the fine determination characteristic of the Regiment.

The 34th was, in 1762, sent to the West Indies, and won distinction at the siege of Fort Moro and the capture of Havannah. In Florida, in 1765, the 34th Regiment received a large draft of men from the 55th Regiment when the latter left Canada to return home. This was the first link in the chain of association, and was destined to bring the two regiments into the permanent bonds of comradeship which have existed since 1881, when they were amalgamated as the 1st and 2nd Battalions of the Border Regiment.

Digitized by Google

The 55th was in America during the War of Independence, and shared in much of the hard fighting, winning high credit for its unvarying steadfastness and splendid discipline. In 1778 it was sent from New York to the West Indies, and rendered valuable service in the campaign that resulted in the capture of the island of St. Lucia. It remained in the West Indies for some years, and while there was given the county title of "The Westmoreland Regiment." In 1785 the Regiment returned home, and did garrison duty till 1793.

The 34th also served in the American War of Independence, principally in the backwoods, where the fighting was of a particularly arduous character. The flank companies were engaged in the Battle of Saratoga, and the Regiment was called upon to oppose the American and French forces operating in Canada. There it remained till 1786, when it returned home, having in the meantime received the county title of "The Cumberland Regiment."

On the outbreak of the French Revolutionary War, the 34th was again sent to the West Indies, and was in 1795-98 actively engaged at St. Lucia, St. Vincent, Guadeloupe, and Grenada, winning great credit. Returning home, it was ordered to be recruited with orphan boys of between the ages of twelve and sixteen years from the poorhouses and workhouses of the county, the authorities considering this a clever method of relieving the country of the expense of maintaining these boys and of bringing the army up to strength. It says much for the excellent treatment and system of training existing in the army that the great majority of these boys developed into splendid soldiers. In 1799 the 34th was sent to South Africa in order to acclimatize their young soldiers. After rendering most creditable service in the Kaffir War of 1800, the Regiment embarked, in 1802, for its first tour of service in India, where it remained for twenty-three years.

The 55th Regiment, on the outbreak of the French Revolutionary War, was, in 1794, hastily dispatched to

Digitized by Google

the Continent, and under the Duke of York was for two years almost constantly engaged with the French troops with varying success.

In 1796 it formed part of Sir Ralph Abercromby's force that captured the island of St. Lucia, which had been restored to France. The actual capture of the island was effected with little loss, but the subsequent sufferings of the troops were terrible, the ranks being decimated by fever and pestilence due to the unhealthy climate. These losses were endured with commendable fortitude, and when the Regiment was brought home in 1797, it had lost more than three-quarters of its numbers through disease. The Regiment was hastily recruited, and in 1799 was again under the command of Sir Ralph Abercromby, this time in Holland. Having landed at Helder, the Regiment was soon heavily engaged in the battle of the sand dunes, where, although greatly outnumbered, it succeeded in driving the enemy off. Subsequently it was heavily engaged in a stubborn fight on the road to Alkmar, afterwards took a prominent part in the battle at Egmont-op-Zee, and returned to England the same year. The 55th had always felt it should have been awarded the battle honours of St. Lucia, Helder, and Egmont-op-Zee, which for some mysterious reason were not conferred, and these have always been referred to as " The Lost Honours." Colonel McDonald, who had commanded the 55th in the West Indies and on the Continent, in presenting new colours to the Regiment in 1801, referred to the fact that up to that time the 55th had since its formation taken part in nearly thirty actions against the enemy, and in innumerable skirmishes and minor operations.

While the 34th Regiment was giving a good account of itself in India, a second battalion was raised at home, which was destined to win lasting glory by its splendid achievements in the Peninsular War. This second battalion landed at Lisbon in 1809, and joined the Duke of Wellington's Army. It fought with signal bravery in the Battle of Albuhera, where it lost nearly half its

Digitized by Google

strength in killed and wounded during a gallant charge with the bayonet on the enemy lines. This was in April, 1811, and in the following October the Regiment won its crowning glory at the Battle of Arroyo dos Molinos. A French force which had been engaged in a series of destructive raids was discovered near the village of that name. Sir Rowland Hill's Division, in which was the 2/34th, made a forced march under cover of night to cut the enemy off. At daybreak, while one half attacked the village where the French had bivouacked, the other half, led by the 34th, moved rapidly round to attack the French in rear. The manœuvre was completely successful, the 34th bursting with such fiery valour into the enemy masses that it cut off and captured the whole of the French 34th Regiment of the Line, together with its Colonel, the Prince d'Aremberg, and General le Brun. The 34th took over a thousand prisoners, and it came out of action wearing the French 34th's caps, and with the brass drums of the French 34th and their drum-major's staff at the head of the Regiment. Those trophies are still in the possession of the 1st Battalion, and are carried with pride on parade on all ceremonial occasions. A two-thirds red and one-third white pom-pom, as worn on the caps of the French 34th Regiment, was later granted to the Regiment to be worn on the head-dress as a distinctive honour, and is commemorated to-day by the red and white centre of the regimental badge. The battle honour of "Arroyo dos Molinos" was conferred on the Regiment, and is carried on its colours, the only Regiment taking part in the action to be so honoured. The 2nd Battalion also fought at Vittoria, where the French were defeated in the fierce and continuous fighting among the passes and peaks of the Pyrenees, on the Nivelle and Nive, at Orthes and at Toulouse. In all this arduous campaigning the Regiment carried itself with great spirit and resolution, and endured many privations and hardships, at one time having little more than acorns to eat for a whole week.

Digitized by Google

With the defeat of the French forces in Spain and the South of France the war ended, and the 2nd Battalion was sent home and disbanded in 1815. In the meantime, the 1st Battalion of the 34th had been rendering good service in India and Ceylon, taking part in the Mahratta War of 1817-20; and, after transferring most of its effectives to other units in India, it returned home in 1823 only 100 strong.

From 1802 to 1813 the 55th was serving in the West Indies, where it suffered heavy losses by disease. In 1814 the Regiment was in Holland again, and bore a gallant part in the attack on the strong fortress of Bergen-op-Zoom. In the subsequent retirement the 55th formed the rearguard, and sacrificed itself in ensuring the safety of the rest of the force. To prevent the colours falling into the hands of the enemy, the ensigns who carried them tore them from their poles and wrapped them round their bodies beneath their tunics. The Regiment's losses were so heavy that, with other details, it was formed into a provisional battalion, which did duty in Dutch Brabant until the peace, and then came home.

In 1822 the 55th Regiment went to the Cape, and for several years experienced arduous service on the Kaffir frontier, being frequently called upon to withstand savage attacks launched by the Zulu armies. It moved to India in 1830, where it added to its fine reputation by the part it took in the Coorg campaign of 1834, the fighting being of a most obstinate nature. The Regiment lost over 100 of all ranks killed and wounded, including its commanding officer, Colonel Mill, who was killed in an attack on a stockade in the jungle.

In 1841 the 55th Regiment was moved from India to China, where its next experience of fighting took place. It greatly distinguished itself in the assault on and capture of the island of Chusan, where Lieutenant Butler captured the Chinese imperial dragon standard that now hangs in Kendal church. At the assault on the city of Ching-kiang-fu, the 55th was the first

Digitized by Google

regiment to scale the city walls. These actions and the many other gallant services rendered in this campaign won for the Regiment the prized badge of The Dragon superscribed "China," which is conspicuous on the regimental colours, on the regimental badge, and on the regimental buttons.

The 55th returned home in 1844, and in 1851 proceeded to Gibraltar.

The 34th, reduced once more to a single-battalion regiment, spent some years at home before going to North America in 1830. During the ten years it spent in Canada it was called upon to undertake much strenuous duty in the disturbances in Lower Canada, on one occasion travelling in the depths of a bitter winter from New Brunswick to Quebec in sleighs in order to quell an insurrection. The Regiment returned home in 1841, but in 1845 was sent abroad again for service in the Mediterranean, to be followed by another tour of duty in the West Indies until 1853.

On the outbreak of the war with Russia in 1854, the 55th was one of the earliest regiments to be dispatched to the Crimea, to be followed later in the same year by the 34th. Both regiments fought with splendid bravery in that campaign, the 55th being present at the Battles of the Alma and Inkerman. Both shared in the hardships and privations of the siege of Sevastopol. At Inkerman, Lieut.-Colonel Daubeney (afterwards Colonel of the Regiment) led a most desperate charge into a dense column of Russians. He had only about forty men with him, but, undaunted by the overwhelming numbers against them, the gallant little band forced their way by sheer pluck through the enemy masses. The enemy was so startled and dismayed that the column was checked, and the Russians were finally repulsed with great loss. The same fine spirit was displayed by both regiments during the attacks made by the British on the fortress of Sevastopol before it was finally captured. In these assaults the Regiment added greatly to its reputation, but lost many brave members.

Digitized by Google

In the attack on the Redan, the 34th lost 322 killed or wounded out of 437 taking part in the assault. That both regiments fought with conspicuous bravery in that campaign is shown by the fact that four Victoria Crosses were won—by Major F. Elton and Pte. T. Beach, of the 55th Foot; and Ptes. W. Coffey and J. J. Sims, of the 34th Foot—while thirty-five N.C.Os. and men of the two regiments were awarded medals for distinguished conduct in the field.

The Crimean War was hardly over before the Indian Mutiny broke out in 1857, and the 34th was hurriedly dispatched to India. It fought with credit and distinction at Cawnpore, at the storming of Meeangunge. It was with Sir Colin Campbell at the siege and capture of Lucknow, the relief of Azimgarh, and the operations in Oudh and Transgogra. Lieutenant-Colonel Kelly (afterwards General Sir R. D. Kelly), of the 34th, was selected to conduct the women and children rescued at Lucknow to Allahabad. His force was but 500 of all ranks, yet, in spite of the appalling state of the country swarming with thousands of mutineers, he safely accomplished his mission. His most important service, however, was in Nepaul, where in March, 1859, he completely crushed the rebels who had sought refuge in that difficult country. The 34th formed the main portion of his little army. In these operations Pte. George Richardson was awarded the Victoria Cross for acts of exceptional bravery.

The 55th Regiment was sent to India in 1863, and the 34th returned home in 1868, proceeding to India again in 1875 for a further period of service there and in Burmah, which lasted till 1890. The 55th Regiment was specially selected in 1865 by the then Commander-in-Chief, Sir Hugh Rose, to help in bringing the refractory Bhutias to reason—an expedition that taxed the courage and fortitude of all engaged. The complete destruction of Dewangiri, the enemy's stronghold, and the swiftness and resolution with which the British troops moved and fought, completely overcame all

Digitized by Google

opposition, and the enemy was glad to submit. The 55th remained in India till 1877, when it returned home. In 1881 the two regiments were amalgamated as the 1st and 2nd Battalions of the Border Regiment, an association that has brought satisfaction and happiness to both. Since the amalgamation the fine qualities of both battalions have been exhibited in many a stern engagement, which has reflected every credit to the Border Regiment and added greatly to its fine reputation. In 1889 the 1st Battalion was engaged in the Burmah Expedition, that ended in the final dispersing of the hordes of dacoits, and brought peace and prosperity to that distracted country.

In 1894-5 the 2nd Battalion was included in the British Force which Sir William Lockhart led over the North-Western Frontier into Waziristan to inflict well-merited punishment on that turbulent tribe. The expedition was a most arduous one, as difficult mountain ranges had to be negotiated in winter time, but the troops exhibited splendid courage and fortitude, and the battalion received the warmest thanks of the General on the successful conclusion of the trying operations.

The 1st Battalion, while at Malta in 1897, sent two companies to Crete to assist in quelling the disturbances prevailing in the island. The Battalion was still at Malta in 1899 when the South African War broke out, and was one of the earliest battalions to reach the Cape to reinforce the British troops there. It arrived at Capetown in October, and was at once dispatched to join Sir Redvers Buller's force in Natal for the relief of Ladysmith. The Battalion came into action against the Boers at Chievley, and had a brisk engagement at Frere. It was in Major-General Hart's 5th Brigade, and was heavily engaged in all the grim fighting along the Tugela, on Spion Kop, and at Venter's Spruit that marked the many attempts, finally crowned with success, to relieve the beleaguered British garrison. The Battalion bore a gallant part in all the subsequent marching and fighting, being joined by the Active Service Companies of the

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

COLOURS

1st Battalion (34th Regiment)

2nd Battalion (55th Regiment)

Digitized by Google

HONOURS.

The Battle Honours of the Regiment are :—

" Havannah," " St. Lucia, 1778," " Albuhera," " Arroyo dos Molinos," " Vittoria," " Pyrenees," " Nivelle," " Nive," " Orthes," " Peninsula," " Alma," " Inkerman," " Sevastopol," " Lucknow," " Relief of Ladysmith," " South Africa, 1899-1902," " Afghanistan, 1919," " Ypres, 1914, '15, '17, '18," " Langemarck, 1914, '17," " Gheluvelt," " Neuve Chapelle," " Frezenberg," " Bellewaarde," " Aubers," " Festubert, 1915," " Loos," " Somme, 1916, '18," " Albert, 1916, '18," " Bazentin," " Delville Wood," " Pozières," " Guillemont," " Flers-Courcelette," " Morval," " Thiepval," " Le Transloy," " Ancre Heights," " Ancre, 1916," " Arras, 1917, '18," " Scarpe, 1917," " Bullecourt," " Messines, 1917, '18," " Pilckem," " Polygon Wood," " Broodseinde," " Poelcappelle," " Passchendaele," " Cambrai, 1917, '18," " St. Quentin," " Rosières," " Lys," " Estaires," " Hazebrouck," " Bailleul," " Kemmel," " Scherpenberg," " Aisne, 1918," " Amiens," " Bapaume, 1918," " Hindenburg Line," " Epéhy," " St. Quentin Canal," " Beaurevoir," " Courtrai," " Selle," " Sambre," " France and Flanders, 1914-18," " Piave," " Vittorio Veneto," " Italy, 1917-18," " Doiran, 1917, '18," " Macedonia, 1915-18," " Helles," " Landing at Helles," " Krithia," " Suvla," " Landing at Suvla," " Scimitar Hill," " Gallipoli, 1915-16," " Egypt, 1916," " N.W. Frontier, India, 1916-17."

of which

" Ypres, 1914, '15, '17, '18," " Langemarck, 1914, '17," " Somme, 1916, '18," " Arras, 1917, '18," " Cambrai, 1917, '18," " Lys," " France and Flanders, 1914-18," " Vittorio Veneto," " Macedonia, 1915-18," " Gallipoli, 1915-16,"

are borne on the King's Colour, and

" Havannah," " St. Lucia, 1778," " Albuhera," " Arroyo dos Molinos," " Vittoria," " Pyrenees," " Nivelle," " Nive," " Orthes," " Peninsula," " Alma," " Inkerman," " Sevastopol," " Lucknow," " Relief of Ladysmith," " South Africa, 1899-1902," " Afghanistan, 1919,"

are borne on the Regimental Colour.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Volunteer battalions. For over two years all ranks of the Border Regiment displayed courage and endurance in the long and trying marches, often on short rations, and in the fighting that punctuated the marches. Losses were heavy and hardships and privations many, but the spirit of the Border Regiment was equal to every test, and brought it through with an enhanced reputation. Many a noble exploit was placed to the credit of men of the Border Regiment in that long campaign.

Brilliant as the history of the Border Regiment had been, its crowning glory was to come when the Great War broke out in August, 1914. The splendid spirit which had ever characterized all ranks from its earliest days was never in better evidence. The hard-fighting Border men, whose marching air of "John Peel" has been heard in nearly every part of the Empire, were called upon to face dangers and endure losses such as would try them to the very limit of human endurance. How well all answered to the test is shown in striking fashion by the long roll of the honoured dead who fell in the cause of liberty while serving in the Regiment, and by the splendid array of honours, distinctions, and decorations bestowed on all ranks in recognition of wonderful feats of individual and collective heroism. These decorations included seven Victoria Crosses. The memory of the losses and these great achievements will be cherished with pride by successive generations of the Regiment so long as it shall endure, and by the Border counties that gave birth to such heroes.

At the outbreak of war the 1st Battalion was in Burmah and the 2nd Battalion at Pembroke Dock. Both were immediately drawn into the war, and saw some of the hardest fighting that fell to the lot of any troops. The 2nd Battalion, as part of the 7th Division, landed in Belgium to attempt the relief of Antwerp. Of all the divisions that landed on the Continent during 1914, the 7th stood out by itself for its remarkable physique, being composed mainly of foreign-service troops. It was as well that it was of exceptional

Digitized by Google

physique, for it was called upon to make one of the most rapid forced marches of the war. Arrested on its way to Antwerp by news of the quite unexpected appearance of strong German forces on its right flank, Sir Henry Rawlinson, who was in command, realized that his division was in danger of being cut off. He at once turned towards the French frontier, and a rapid march was kept up during the next week in order to link up with the rest of the British Army, then moving up from the Marne. The 7th Division had reached the area just west of Ypres when it made contact with the British cavalry. The enemy was there found in ominous strength, and the division turned to face them. Strung out in a woefully thin line, the division, crouching in shallow, hastily dug trenches, put up a splendid fight against overwhelming odds. The Germans, deceived by the bold front and well-sustained rapid fire of the gallant force, recoiled in dismay from the British line under the impression that there were thousands instead of hundreds defending the trenches. From October 16th onwards the small but gallant British force faced the Germans with undaunted courage, the instructions being that the division was to hold on to the last man, until the rest of the British Army could be got up to their help. So the gallant division held on day after day against an ever-increasing storm of shell and shot of all descriptions. Their losses grew heavier and heavier as the enemy began to realize how few were the numbers opposing them. At length Sir Douglas Haig's 2nd Division arrived, followed quickly by other troops, and the long-suffering and sorely battered 7th Division was withdrawn from the line. For many days the 7th Division and the cavalry had held a line of eight miles against four times their own number of the enemy and six times their own weight of artillery. It was touch and go, but the splendid courage of the British soldier won through, and the position was saved. In that gallant affair the 2nd Battalion fully shared, and it came out of the long struggle a mere skeleton of its original

Digitized by Google

splendid self. It was speedily reinforced from the 3rd (Special Reserve) Battalion, which throughout the war trained and dispatched a constant stream of recruits to the battalions overseas.

At home, the 4th and 5th Territorial Battalions were mobilized and sent overseas in 1914 to join their Regular comrades. Imbued with the same fine spirit, they acquitted themselves throughout the Great War in the same resolute way, winning honour for themselves, and adding to the good name of the Regiment. New Service Battalions were brought into existence, and when trained were moved overseas to take their share in the world-wide struggle. By the end of the war there were twelve Battalions of the Regiment doing good service—nine of them at the front, and three acting as draft-finding units.

The 1st Battalion was, at the outbreak of the war, brought home and embodied in the 87th Brigade, 29th Division, whose experiences in the war were unique. This division, composed almost entirely of British battalions withdrawn from Indian service, won immortal fame by the heroism it exhibited in the landing on the shores of Gallipoli, and the months of fierce fighting among the rocks and gullies of that desolate peninsula. Landing in the face of heavy fire on April 25th, 1915, the 1st Battalion successfully carried the adjacent heights at the point of the bayonet, and held the position in spite of the numerous counter-attacks launched against it. Without respite of any kind from the continuous hostile bombardment, the Battalion withstood the Turks throughout the long months which followed, till the evacuation of the peninsula was ordered. The attack and subsequent capture of Boomerang Fort in July by one company of the Battalion will for ever stand out as one of the finest examples of courage and discipline under heavy fire ever shown by the British soldier. Thus the 1st Battalion may justly claim to have had a lion's share in the historical landing and campaign of 1915; and while many a good comrade, including Lieut.-Colonel R. O. C. Hume, commanding the Battalion, made the

Digitized by Google

supreme sacrifice, the splendid valour shown by all ranks throughout that fearful campaign added a lustre to the name of the Regiment that has been a source of justifiable pride to the counties of Cumberland and Westmorland.

In August, 1915, the 6th (Service) Battalion took part in the landing at Suvla Bay, and worthily upheld the traditions of the Regiment.

In March, 1915, the 2nd Battalion, restored to a semblance of its original strength by strong drafts from home, shared in the memorable Battle of Neuve Chapelle. One of its most gallant feats in this battle was the storming of the Moulin du Pietre, which had been converted into a veritable fortress by the Germans. The position was carried with a rush by the Border men at the point of the bayonet, and 300 of the 55th German Regiment, with a number of machine guns, were captured. Nearly one-third of the Battalion fell in the Neuve Chapelle operations but the losses were compensated for by the splendid name the Regiment was earning. With the losses again replaced, the Battalion was engaged in the attack on Festubert in May, where the 7th Prussian Corps was badly mauled by the 7th British Division. Again the losses were heavy, including Lieut.-Colonel L. I. Wood, commanding the Battalion, but the Border men still splendidly upheld their fine fighting reputation.

In September of the same year the 2nd Battalion, again brought up to strength by drafts from home, took part in the Battle of Loos ; and later the 7th and 8th (Service) Battalions, having completed their training, were moved overseas to serve on the Western Front.

Early in 1916 the 1st and 6th Battalions, having been withdrawn from Gallipoli, were sent to France, and were soon engaged in the active preparations for a general advance, in co-operation with the French, on the Somme.

On July 1st began the great Battle of the Somme, and the several battalions of the Border Regiment

Digitized by Google

engaged added further honours to their already glorious record. The 1st Battalion, with its *moral* in no way shaken by the heavy bombardment which wiped out the battalion preceding it, advanced on its objective, the Beaucourt Redoubt (near Beaumont Hamel), with all its old dash and vigour. Although the Battalion suffered over 75 per cent. of casualties and failed to take its objective, its heroism and self-sacrifice was largely responsible for the successes achieved farther to the south. The 2nd Battalion shared in the successful attack made by the 7th Division on Fricourt, and pressed on to the capture of Mametz. Subsequently this Battalion was selected as the storming troops for the attack on Bazentin le Petit, where one of the most brilliant successes of the battle was won, two powerful lines of trenches being captured in ten minutes. The 6th and 11th Battalions were conspicuous in the grim struggle for the capture of the Thiepval Ridge, in the final phases of which the 8th Battalion joined, carrying their assault with great determination nearly a mile beyond their objective.

During this year the 9th Battalion was sent to Salonika, and fought with distinction on the Vardar and Lake Doiran fronts.

The deeds of the battalions of the Regiment in 1917 added still further glory to their already illustrious history in the Great War, and they continued to hold a fighting reputation which was second to none. In the Battles of Arras, Messines, Ypres (third), and Cambria, the good name of the Border Regiment was upheld in many a hard-fought action, notably at Serre, Bullecourt, the Noordhemhoek Ridge, and Gheluvelt, and, in spite of hardships and losses, maintained that cheerful spirit that has at all times been characteristic of the Regiment. In consequence of the retreat of our Allies on the Italian front, the 2nd Battalion was in November moved with the 7th Division to Italy, where at first it occupied the line of the Piave, subsequently a position on the Asiago Plateau, and finally took part in the overthrow of the Austrian Army on the Venetian plains.

Digitized by Google

The last year of the war (1918) brought even greater trials and still greater triumphs to the Border Regiment. All of its battalions overseas—on the Western Front, in Italy, and at Salonika—were heavily involved in the desperate defensive operations in the spring of the year. Then, on the Western Front, the Germans, staking everything upon one last despairing effort, put the whole of their man and gun-power into one great smashing attack on the right of the British Army, in the hope of crushing their way through to the coast and separating the Allies. For a month the enemy pushed on, sacrificing regiments, brigades, and divisions to accomplish their object. Battered and mauled by the devastating storm of shell, gas, and flame that beat continuously on them, the British battalions held on to their positions till either decimated or overwhelmed. The Border Regiment shared in all the fighting of this critical period, the shattered remnants of its battalions falling back from position to position, ever presenting an undaunted face to the enemy, and hitting back with deadly effect at every opportunity, till at last the enemy attack was checked and brought to a halt. Innumerable deeds of splendid self-sacrifice were performed by the British troops in that conflict, and in these deeds the Border men freely shared. The spirit of the Regiment was equal to the terrible ordeal, and when at length, in the summer of 1918, the British troops launched their final great attack on all fronts, the Border battalions, though weakened by great losses, were in the forefront of the fighting. The enemy was everywhere thrust back by the valour of the British troops, who, giving the Germans and their Allies no rest, drove them at the point of the bayonet out of the boasted "impregnable" defences of the Hindenburg line, and rushed them back in growing disorder to the banks of the Rhine. In all this desperate fighting the Border Regiment was deeply involved, but rose equal to every demand made on it, in defence and attack. It was a period that severely tested the endurance as well as the fighting spirit of the Border men,

Digitized by Google

for they had to go on without pause or rest till the enemy was compelled to sue for peace.

After the signing of the Armistice the 1st Battalion had the satisfaction of taking part in the march to the Rhine. There it remained in occupation of the perimeter of the Cologne bridgehead until 1919, when it returned to England, and, after a few months at home, proceeded to India, where it was at first stationed at Karachi. From here it was moved two years later to Kohat, and in the hot weather of 1922 it was quartered at Parachinar, 117 miles west of Kohat and 16 miles from the Peiwar Kotal. From November of this year until the following March the 1st Battalion was on active service with a punitive force carrying out operations against the Mahsud Waziris.

These operations, which took place under very severe weather conditions, consisted in occupying the Razmak Plateau and in devastating the Makin area. On the conclusion of this expedition the 1st Battalion spent a year at Peshawar, then a year at Aden, and finally returned to England in 1925.

The 2nd Battalion remained in Italy until the beginning of 1919, and was then sent to Ireland, where it played an active part during the disturbed period leading up to the establishment of the Irish Free State.

At the final evacuation of the South of Ireland by British Troops in 1922, it was moved to Aldershot, where in 1924 new Colours were presented to the Battalion by H.M. The King, and the old Colours, which had been carried since 1888, were laid up in Carlisle Cathedral.

In December, 1924, the 2nd Battalion was sent to Malta and in 1926 embarked in H.T. *Nevasa* for Port Sudan, from where it went to Khartoum with detachments at Atbara, Said Pasha and El Obeid. In November the same year it returned to Malta in H.T. *Neuralia*.

Meanwhile the 1st Battalion returned to the United Kingdom from Aden, and was stationed at York.

Digitized by Google

At midnight on 21st January, 1927, orders were received that the 13th Infantry Brigade, to which the 1st Battalion belonged, and the 5th Armoured Car Company would hold themselves in readiness to proceed to China immediately. Civil war had broken out and the safety of Shanghai was threatened. The mobilization of the 1st Battalion was completed in eight days, which was six days less than the normal time and therefore not without considerable confusion. On the night of 28th-29th January the Battalion left York and sailed for China from London in s.s. *Karmala* on the 29th.

The 2nd Battalion at Malta had also received orders to proceed to China, and sailed in s.s. *Megantic* as part of the 14th Brigade to form part of the Shanghai Defence Force. On arrival at Shanghai the 2nd Battalion was posted to various areas around the perimeter of the International Settlement. On arrival of the 1st Battalion, who had disembarked at Hong Kong for a few days before going on to Shanghai, the Band and Drums of the 2nd Battalion played them into camp.

Apart from the Great War, the meeting of the two battalions at the same station was a unique occasion, which seldom occurs in the history of any regiment of the British Army, and the opportunity was taken to hold inter-battalion sports and games.

The situation in China having eased off, the 1st Battalion returned to England and arrived in York on 30th December, 1927.

In June, 1927, the 2nd Battalion embarked in H.T. *Herminius* for Chinwangtao and from there went by rail to Tientsin. From Tientsin the Battalion provided the Legation Guard at Peking in its turn. Companies carried out musketry and training, and rested at Shanhaikuan, which is by the sea at the eastern end of the Great Wall of China.

In November, 1929, the Battalion left for Bombay in the *City of Marseilles*, arriving at Rawalpindi in

Digitized by Google

December. In May, 1930, the Battalion was moved to Peshawar owing to civil disturbances and tribal incursions, and in June and August was in action against Afridi lashkars which had come into the Peshawar area.

After being split up at Nowshera on garrison duty, with detachments at Peshawar, Risalpur and Gharial, the Battalion was concentrated at Nowshera in September, and in November moved back to Rawalpindi.

In October, 1928, the 1st Battalion moved from York to Bordon, and in February, 1933, to Holywood, Northern Ireland. In July, 1933, it was called out in aid of the civil power owing to riots in Belfast.

In December, 1935, the new Colours arrived. These, of new design, were the first Colours of the 1st Battalion The Border Regiment, the previous ones being those of the 34th Foot. Up to date the new Colours have not been presented or dedicated.

In January, 1937, the Battalion left Holywood for Catterick Camp, and in April became a rifle battalion under the new Army organization. In November they embarked for a " short tour " of duty in Palestine.

In 1930 it was learned that the Saskatchewan Border Regiment had been allied to the Regiment, and in 1931 the 31st Battalion of the Australian Forces was allied to the Regiment.

Meanwhile, in 1931, the 2nd Battalion was again moved, this time to Mirpur in Kashmir, on account of disturbances, a company remaining there until March, 1932.

In 1933 the Battalion moved to Landi Kotal in the Khyber Pass, the families living at Cherat. In December, 1934, the Battalion moved to Ferozepore.

In March, 1935, a company was called out for riots in Kasur, and in August the Battalion was sent to Lahore on account of civil disturbances.

Such, briefly, is the history of this famous Regiment, and all who have served in it are justly proud of the

Digitized by Google

great deeds it has accomplished. To those who have the honour to serve in it at the present time the great traditions handed down to them are a precious heritage, inspiring them to a high sense of duty, to be worthy of that long line of heroes who have shed so much lustre on the name of the Border Regiment.

THE REGIMENTAL BADGE

The Badge of the Border Regiment as worn at the present day dates from 1887. It is composed of the following eight distinct emblems, all of which have been adopted from the breastplates and chaco-plates worn by the 34th and 55th Regiments prior to the above-mentioned date.

1. **The Crown**, surmounting the badge, representing allegiance and loyalty of the Regiment to its Sovereign.

2. **The Laurel Wreath**—the honour given to the 34th Regiment in commemoration of the Battle of Fontenoy, 1745 (see page 5).

3. **The Eight-Pointed Star**, commonly known as the " Cumberland Star," is the Star of the Order of the Garter. It was originally adopted in the badge of the old Royal Cumberland Militia when the Duke of Cumberland was invested with the Order of the Garter in 1746, and later was inaugurated in the badge of the Cumberland Regiment (34th).

4. **The Grand Cross of the Order of the Bath.**—This cross has at times been erroneously referred to as a " Maltese Cross." It is to be observed that this cross carries a ball at the extremity of each of the eight points, and has a lion between each arm. It is distinctly the Grand Cross of the Order of the Bath, and was inaugurated into the badge of the 34th Regiment at the beginning of the nineteenth century, at the

Digitized by Google

instigation of one of three successive Colonels of the Regiment, each of whom held the distinction of G.C.B.—viz.:

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Eyre Coote, G.C.B., Colonel of the Regiment, 1810;

Lieut.-Gen Sir Lowry Cole, G.C.B., Colonel of the Regiment, 1816;

Lieut.-Gen. Sir T. M. Brisbane, G.C.B., Colonel of the Regiment, 1826.

5. **The Red and White Centre.**—This represents the two-thirds red and one-third white chaco pom-pom of the 34th French Regiment, the wearing of which was sanctioned as a distinction for the 34th Regiment in commemoration of the Battle of Arroyo dos Molinos in 1811 (see page 10).

The name and date of this battle are inscribed in a circle around the red and white centre.

6. **The Dragon, superscribed by the word "China."**—This commemorates the part taken by the 55th Regiment in the Chinese War of 1842 (see page 11).

7. **The Battle Honours.**—Those gained prior to the Great War and carried on the Regimental Colours are shown on the arms of the Grand Cross of the Order of the Bath.

8. **The Scroll,** with the name of the Regiment inscribed upon it.

It is interesting to note that the general arrangement of the present Regimental Badge is almost identical with the design on the breastplate, which was worn by the 34th (Cumberland) Regiment as long ago as 1820.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY OF THE DORSETSHIRE REGIMENT

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY

OF

THE DORSETSHIRE REGIMENT

ALDERSHOT:
GALE & POLDEN LIMITED

Digitized by Google

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY
GALE & POLDEN LIMITED
ALDERSHOT
—
1941

6097-R. 8

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY

OF THE

DORSETSHIRE REGIMENT

THE history of the Dorsetshire Regiment has an interest much out of the ordinary, for during its 235 years of service it has figured in many remarkable exploits and won fame in many parts of the world. It has the unique honour of having been the first British regiment to serve in India, and took a prominent part in shaping the history of that great empire in the early days of British influence. It was one of the six regiments of resolute soldiery which for nearly four years (1779-1783) successfully defended the fortress of Gibraltar against the combined land and sea forces of Spain and France. It also formed part of the garrison which defended Gibraltar in 1726-7, and is the only regiment in the army to have served in both defences. Its conspicuous bravery in Egypt in 1801 at the attack on the fort of Marabout is permanently commemorated on its buttons and collar badge by the Sphinx, inscribed "Marabout," a unique honour among the regiments of the British Army. It enjoyed for many years the unusual privilege of bringing on parade on ceremonial occasions a brass field-gun taken in that action. It has served as Marines and for one brief period as Light Cavalry. It has faced dangers and endured hardships by land and sea, and has been decimated by grievous losses in battle and by disease in fever-stricken countries. Right throughout its service it has maintained a high standard of military efficiency, and has won a splendid name for stubborn courage in the hour of danger that has become a cherished tradition of the Regiment.

Digitized by Google

Of the two regiments, the 39th and 54th, which in 1881 became amalgamated as the 1st and 2nd Battalions of the Dorsetshire Regiment, the 39th Foot has the longer history, being one of the corps added to the British Army in the reign of William III. It was raised in Ireland by Colonel R. Coote, under a warrant dated February 13th, 1702. Colonel Coote was shortly afterwards killed in a duel, and was succeeded by Colonel—afterwards General—Sankey. Five years after being raised the Regiment was sent to Spain, and came under the command of the famous Earl of Peterborough, whose operations were marked by many daring exploits, in which he did not hesitate to mount his infantry on horses or mules to give them the mobility of cavalry. To enable the 39th to reach the scene of one of his battles in time, Sankey's Regiment was mounted on mules. The incident gave rise to a nickname long carried by the Regiment, that of "Sankey's Horse." The 39th took part in the campaign in Portugal and Spain in 1708-11, and won the highest commendation for exceptional steadiness and bravery at the Battle of Caya, May, 1709.

In 1712 the Regiment was in Portugal, and in 1713 at Gibraltar, making its first acquaintance with the rock fortress, where some years later it was destined to win undying fame. Service in Minorca followed, and while there in 1718 it was embarked on Sir George Byng's Fleet to serve as Marines, being present at the naval battle against the Spanish Fleet off Messina. After a long spell of active service afloat, the Regiment was landed and returned home. A second spell of service at Gibraltar (1726-7) was more exciting, for the fortress was besieged by the Spaniards, and the 39th was among the reinforcements sent to the assistance of the garrison, which eventually beat off the attackers after a strenuous siege. The 39th then saw service in the West Indies, and after returning home from Jamaica had another spell of service afloat as Marines, from 1744 to 1748.

Digitized by Google

In 1754 the 39th Regiment proceeded to Madras, being the first British regiment to land in India. It served in Madras, under Colonel Adlercron, until August, 1756, when part of the Regiment was detached to Bengal. In May, 1757, Colonel Adlercron commanded a force, including part of the 39th, sent to relieve Trichinopoly, and was engaged in operations in Wandewash. He reached the rank of Lieutenant-General, and an old colour carried by the 39th at this period was in possession of his family till a few years ago, when it was returned to the Regiment, where it now remains. Three companies of the 39th served under that great Indian soldier, Clive, in the operations against Surajah Dowlah, Nabob of Bengal, which ended with the total defeat of the enemy at Plassey, near Calcutta, on June 23rd, 1757. The British force on this occasion consisted only of 3,000 men, the majority native troops. The Nabob's army mustered 40,000 infantry, 15,000 cavalry, and 50 large guns, beside a number of small guns manned by French artillerymen. This formidable force was completely routed by the desperate bravery of the small British force, who captured the whole of the enemy's camp, baggage, guns and stores. This victory constituted one of the most complete and overwhelming achievements in military history. As a result of the victory, the whole of Bengal, a territory larger and more populous than Great Britain, came under British rule. In the battle the 39th bore the leading part, being in the centre of the line of attack, and so distinguished itself by its undaunted bravery and conspicuous valour that it was given the proud motto " Primus in Indis " (First in India) and the battle honour " Plassey " for its colours. Thus the motto bears a double meaning, for it not only records the fact that the Regiment was the first of the King's regiments to serve in India, but was first in bravery and courage in the battles of those days. The 39th was also prominent in other great actions in India, winning added fame in the battles against the combined French and native forces at Nellore, Trichinopoly, Wandewash, and elsewhere.

Digitized by Google

The 39th returned home in 1758 with a glorious record, which was worthily upheld by the detachment of the Regiment that served under the Marquis of Granby in his campaign in Germany in 1759.

In the meantime, the present 2nd Battalion had been raised as the 56th Regiment of Foot in 1755, and in 1757 had been renumbered as the 54th Foot. It was raised at Salisbury by the Duke of Argyll, and had a very gaudy uniform of scarlet, with " popinjay " green facings profusely laced, the officers wearing silver and other ranks yellow lace. The Regiment embarked on the British Fleet and served as Marines in the Mediterranean under Lord Hawke, and after being landed and doing garrison duty at Gibraltar came home in 1765, being relieved at Gibraltar by the 39th Regiment, with which it was afterwards to be permanently linked as the 1st and 2nd Battalions Dorsetshire Regiment. The 39th remained at Gibraltar for many years, and was one of the six splendid regiments that took part in the memorable defence of the fortress when it was besieged for nearly four years by the full naval and military strengths of Spain and France. The defence put up by the British garrison stands to this day as one of the wonders of the world. When the fortress was first besieged, the garrison consisted of 5,382 troops all told ; General Eliott was the Governor-General, and his determined handling of the defence inspired all the troops under him with the greatest confidence. All the defences were strengthened, and many of the infantry, including picked men from the 39th Regiment, were transferred to the artillery to serve the guns. The combined Spanish and French fleets blockaded the Rock from the sea, while on the land side an enormous army was engaged in constructing forts, redoubts, entrenchments, and batteries from which to attack. General Eliott formed a corps of sharpshooters, the command of which was given to Lieutenant Burleigh of the 39th Regiment, which rendered splendid service in keeping the enemy constantly engaged, and inflicting heavy

Digitized by Google

losses. As the winter of 1779 came down the gallant garrison began to suffer from want of fresh provisions, which became very scarce and dear. Bread was almost impossible to get, and was not permitted to be issued except to the sick and children. Salt meat and biscuits, and not much of that, soon became the food of the troops, with an occasional issue of four ounces of rice as a full day's ration. Fuel was exhausted, and fires were with difficulty made of the salt-encrusted timbers of old ships broken up in the harbour for the purpose. To the rigours of the siege was added a violent outbreak of scurvy among the devoted troops, due to the want of fresh vegetables and medicines. As the winter wore on, the scanty store of food grew so alarmingly low that the already meagre ration was reduced to just enough to keep life in the bodies of the men. But their courage remained as high as ever, and they took their turns at trench or battery duty with undiminished spirit, and endured the inclement weather and the shortage of food with splendid fortitude. Admiral Rodney, after defeating two enemy fleets at sea, reached Gibraltar in the following spring, bringing welcome reinforcements of 1,052 men and an abundance of stores. This greatly heartened the garrison, who, as soon as Rodney's fleet left, found the fortress as closely besieged as ever. The defence was stubbornly maintained against every attempt to capture it by assault, and by the end of the summer provisions again began to run out and scurvy to reappear. While shot and shell were unceasingly exchanged between the opposing forces, scurvy and starvation rations made steady inroads into the effective strength of the garrison, but there was no thought of surrender. Throughout the second winter the gallant garrison faced foes, elements, disease, and starvation, until in the April of 1781 another British fleet succeeded in reaching the harbour with stores and food. The enemy thereafter resolved, finding it was impossible to starve the gallant garrison out, to make further desperate attacks by land and sea, and a vast army and

Digitized by Google

fleet were assembled to carry this out. The adjacent hills over the Spanish border became thronged with great crowds of spectators, among them the highest families in the land, assembled to see the fortress beaten to powder and the British flag trailed in the dust. But the night before the grand attack was to have been launched, half the British garrison filed silently out of their defence works and made a most determined surprise attack. The whole enemy armies were routed, their batteries set on fire, and cannon blown up and spiked, their entrenchments destroyed, and a very large number of the enemy killed or taken prisoners. Damage to the extent of two million pounds was done to the enemy's stores and equipment in that night's work, in which the 39th bore a gallant part. The loss to the British was less than one hundred. This reverse postponed the grand assault on the Rock for some time, but the siege was closely maintained. At length the enemy launched his great attack, in which 200 pieces of heavy ordnance opened fire from floating batteries in the Bay and 400 pieces on the land side, directed on the fortifications after weeks of preparatory artillery fire. But the garrison, undaunted by such a fire, replied with vigour, using red-hot shot to set fire to and sink the enemy's floating batteries and warships in the Bay, and beating off many attempts to storm the fortress from the land side. In that great conflict the British destroyed nearly all the enemy fleet, with over 5,000 men on board. The siege was continued for some months longer, but in the spring of 1783 the enemy retired disheartened and defeated, leaving the British garrison victorious, after three years and seven months' conflict. The garrison sustained a loss of 1,231 men, and expended 8,000 barrels of gunpowder. Such a splendid defence stands unparalleled in the history of the world. Each of the regiments engaged in the defence was given the badge of the Castle of Gibraltar with the motto in commemoration of the gallant part it took in that unique contest.

Digitized by Google

It was at this period that the 39th Foot received its first territorial title, that of " The East Middlesex Regiment," whilst the 54th Foot became " The West Norfolk Regiment," being then in America, where it had served at New York, Charlestown, Rhode Island, and elsewhere during the War of Independence. It is an interesting fact that the sergeant-major of the 54th Regiment at this period was William Cobbett, who became famous as a social reformer, and died a Member of Parliament. His condemnation of flogging in the army had effect in its eventual abolishment.

The French Revolution brought both the 39th and 54th Regiments into the field again, and while the former fought with great valour in the West Indies in the capture of Martinique and Guadeloupe in 1794, the latter served with the Duke of York in Flanders. The 39th was reduced to a mere handful in the defence of Guadeloupe, there being but a score or so surviving to return home with the Colours. It was, however, quickly recruited up to strength again, and, returning to the West Indies, assisted in the capture of Demerara and Berbice (1796–1800), Surinam (1801–2) and Antigua (1803), and then returned home.

Both regiments raised second battalions at this period, and all four gathered fresh laurels while fighting for King and country in various parts of the world. The county title of the 39th was changed to the Dorsetshire Regiment, and it recruited strongly in that county. The 1st/39th served in Italy and Sicily, sharing in the capture of Ischia and Procida, and in the defence of Sicily against Murat's Army in 1810. The 2nd/39th had meantime joined Sir Arthur Wellesley's Army in the Peninsula, and fought in most of his great battles, including Busaco, the siege and storming of Badajos, at Albuhera, where, although less than 400 strong, it fought with a distinguished courage against great odds, in a key position. In 1811 the 1st/39th arrived to join the Peninsula Army, and, absorbing the effectives of the 2nd Battalion, fought throughout the remainder of the

Digitized by Google

campaign, adding the battle honours of "Albuhera," "Vittoria," "Pyrenees," "Nivelle," "Nive," "Orthes," and "Peninsula" to the colours; while the part played by the Regiment in the action at Garris is permanently commemorated by naming one block of the Depot Barracks "Garris."

The 54th Regiment was displaying equally fine spirit in action, for both battalions were engaged in arduous operations on the coast of Brittany, in the Ferrol Expedition, at Cadiz, and Minorca. In 1801 the 54th accompanied Sir Ralph Abercromby to Egypt, where the British soldiers demonstrated, as in the famous landing at Gallipoli during the Great War, that they are capable of achieving the seemingly "impossible." Napoleon's veteran troops, who had never up to then known defeat, opposed the British landing on the shore of Aboukir Bay, but opposed in vain. Nothing but death could prevent these gallant British soldiers from getting ashore in the face of murderous fire. These splendid men not only established a footing, but actually drove the enemy in confusion from the beach. In the subsequent battle and in the siege and capture of Alexandria both battalions of the 54th bore a conspicuous part. The fort of Marabout, near Alexandria, was stormed and captured in intrepid fashion by the 1st/54th, and to mark his appreciation of this gallant exploit the General presented the 54th with two of the brass field-guns mounted in the fort. One of these guns always accompanied the Regiment till 1840, when the gun was withdrawn and temporarily placed in the Museum at Woolwich. It is now at the Depot at Dorchester. In lieu of the gun thus withdrawn, the following appeared in the *Gazette* of January 28th, 1842:—"Her Majesty has been graciously pleased to permit the 54th Regiment to bear upon its colours and appointments, in addition to the distinctions which it has previously obtained, the word 'Marabout,' in commemoration of the gallantry evinced by the Regiment at the assault and capture of that fort, in Egypt, on August 21st, 1801." The badge

Digitized by Google

of the Sphinx, superscribed "Egypt" and inscribed "Marabout" in Egyptian characters on the plinth, borne on the colours, is a permanent memorial to the Regiment's valour in that campaign. After the surrender of Alexandria the 54th went to Gibraltar, where its 2nd Battalion was disbanded. A mutiny breaking out in the garrison, the 54th behaved with such unflinching loyalty and discipline that H.R.H. the Duke of Kent presented to the Officers' Mess a piece of plate valued at four hundred guineas in recognition of the Regiment's distinguished good conduct on that occasion.

The 54th Regiment landed with the Duke of Wellington in Belgium, and was with the Reserve at Halle during the Battle of Waterloo; and a private of the Regiment was the last man killed in the Napoleonic Wars.

During the subsequent years the 39th and 54th Regiments experienced arduous service in various parts of the world, at one time fighting in South America, in Australia, Van Diemen's Land, at the Cape, in the West Indies and India, where it took part in the Coorg War; also in Burma during the first Burmese War of 1824, where it added the battle honour of "Ava" to its glorious records. The 39th fought in the Mahratta War of 1843, being specially prominent in the final victory of Maharajpore, December 29th, which finished the war, and was in the Crimea throughout that campaign.

In 1857 the Mutiny called the 54th to India, embarking on the transport *Sarah Sands*. The vessel took fire, but the splendid discipline and courage of the troops enabled every person on board to be saved. On November 11th, when in the Indian Ocean, about 800 miles from Mauritius, the ship was discovered to be on fire. This occurrence afforded the Regiment an opportunity of showing its steady discipline and valour. The work of clearing the hold of the large quantity of gunpowder which formed the greater part of the cargo was one of the greatest danger, and entailed many acts of dauntless heroism. For over seventeen hours the officers and men were engaged in an incessant conflict with the

Digitized by Google

flames, but by unflinching bravery and dogged determination the fire was eventually overcome. During the fire the stern of the ship had been blown out by the explosion of a barrel of gunpowder, and the vessel abaft the mainmast was a smoking chasm, with 17 feet of water in the after-compartments. At every roll of the ship four huge iron tanks dashed against the sides, threatening to breach the bent and weakened plates. The port side of the stern was blown out to the water's edge and admitted every wave. The mizzen-mast was gone, the main-mast was tottering, and all the charts, compasses, and chronometers were gone. Such was the state of the vessel when the fire was subdued, and in spite of these difficulties the vessel at length reached Mauritius after twelve days of the most strenuous exertions of all on board and incessant work at the pumps. An address of a highly complimentary nature was made to the Regiment by the Legislative Council of Mauritius, and a report of the circumstances having been made to the Horse Guards, a General Order, dated February 27th, 1858, was published, and ordered to be read at the head of every regiment in the Army. The following is an extract :—

" H.R.H. the General Officer Commanding-in-Chief has great gratification in making known to the Army the substance of a report received from Major-General Breton, Commanding the Troops at the Mauritius, recording the remarkable gallantry and resolution displayed by the officers and soldiers of the 54th Regiment on board the ship *Sarah Sands* on November 11th, 1857, under circumstances of a most trying nature—namely, when that vessel took fire at sea, having at the time a large quantity of ammunition on board.

" H.R.H. is pleased to observe that the behaviour of the 54th Regiment during the course of this distressing occurrence was most praiseworthy, and by its result must render manifest to all the advantages of subordination and strict obedience to orders under the most alarming and dangerous circumstances in which soldiers can be placed."

Digitized by Google

Arriving in India, the Regiment rendered the most devoted service in the campaign, under Lord Clyde, adding greatly to its high reputation.

The two regiments became linked in 1881, each bringing to the common stock a splendid record of which all ranks are justly proud. Since those days the 1st Battalion has served with distinction in Egypt, in the Nile Expedition of 1885, and in India, where it bore itself with conspicuous gallantry in the Tirah Campaign of 1897–8. It was during the Tirah Campaign that Corporal S. Vickery won the V.C. for bringing in wounded men under circumstances of the greatest danger to himself in the Warran Valley Expedition.

The 2nd Battalion was next employed on active service in the Boer War of 1899–1902, forming part of the 10th Brigade in Sir Redvers Buller's relief force. Its striking valour at the Battle of Spion Kop earned it warm praise, for it was the last to quit that fatal hill. It fought in all the actions for the relief of Ladysmith, subsequently sharing in the two years of hard marching and fighting that ensued, until the resistance of the enemy had been worn down and they were glad to sue for peace. The Regiment's most conspicuous actions in that long campaign after the relief of Ladysmith were at Alleman's Nek, the taking of Gras Kop, and the defence of Van Wyk, and it earned the highest praise from every general officer under whose command it came. General Talbot Coke wrote of the 2nd Battalion that " it had gained a name that will be carried by your Regiment for years to come, and upheld the grand traditions of the old 54th." The Mounted Infantry Company of the Regiment also rendered valuable services, and exhibited a stubborn courage in the defence of Itala, when surrounded by greatly superior forces of the enemy. No fewer than fifteen D.C.Ms. were awarded to men of the Regiment for conspicuous bravery in that campaign.

With such a splendid history behind it, and imbued with traditions of the noblest kind, the Regiment could

Digitized by Google

be trusted to render a good account of itself when the greatest test that soldiers were ever put to came during the Great War of 1914–18. Right well did all ranks of the Dorsetshire Regiment acquit themselves in that grim struggle, as the long roll of honour can well testify. The outbreak of the war found the 1st Battalion in Ireland and the 2nd Battalion in India, and within a short time both were fighting hard in two vastly different theatres of war—the 1st Battalion as part of the 11th Infantry Brigade, 5th Division, on the Western Front ; and the 2nd Battalion in Mesopotamia.

The 1st Battalion was quickly mobilized and landed in France in the third week in August, and on the fateful Sunday morning—the 23rd—was on the left of the British line strung out along the Mons Canal awaiting the coming of the Germans. That British force, consisting of the 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 5th Divisions, with a division of cavalry, alone interposed between a quarter of a million highly trained German troops and the coast and northern ports of France. The Germans came on flushed with early successes, and equipped in the most lavish manner with an abundant artillery and assisted by every aid that science could devise. They regarded the British force as a " contemptible little army " that could be brushed aside, ignoring that there is something besides numbers in the composition of an effective fighting force, and that something the British possessed in abundance. It was courage and discipline, and a refusal to be impressed by overwhelming numbers ; and when the Germans came to measure their strength against the British, they were disagreeably surprised to find it much more difficult to sweep them aside than they anticipated. On that bright summer's morning the British troops sang and whistled cheerfully as they dug shallow trenches along the canal, and when the scouting cavalry brought word that dense masses of the enemy were approaching, the spades were put aside, and the British infantry, trained to a degree of musketry never before reached by any troops, lay down in their trenches and

Digitized by Google

with fingers on their rifle triggers awaited the appearance of the enemy. They did not have long to wait, for out of the woods came dense masses of the Germans, while overhead a veritable tempest of shrapnel began to burst. The attack was met with such a devastating rifle fire that the German masses were mowed down, staggered and broke, and fled back to the woods. Again and again the same thing happened, the British rifle fire being so deadly and rapid that the Germans believe even to this day that the line was held by a multitude of machine guns. The grim conflict raged with unceasing fierceness till the late afternoon, when news came that, instead of there being, as was believed, two German Army Corps attacking, there were actually four, whilst a fifth was rapidly marching round the left flank to cut the small British Army off. There was nothing for it but to retire, and this was begun as the shades of evening came down. All through the night and the next day the British were marching and fighting, the 5th Division on the left being assailed front, rear, and flank by large bodies of the enemy, eager to cut them off. The division had to fight, not only for its own safety, but also for the safety of the whole British Army. Every man in the division fought with heroic determination, being constantly beset by fresh enemies brought up in motor vehicles. Throughout the Sunday, Monday, and Tuesday the British fell back, getting little or no rest, till Le Cateau was reached. The 4th Division came up and afforded some little measure of relief, and on the Wednesday the 2nd Army Corps, consisting of the 3rd, 4th and 5th Divisions, turned at bay to fight one of the greatest battles of the war at Le Cateau. In that battle the 5th Division changed over to the right of the line, the 15th Brigade being near Troisville; 70,000 British soldiers that day faced 170,000 Germans supported by an overpowering artillery. The full weight of the German attack was made on the right of the British line in the hope of driving in a wedge between the 1st and 2nd Army Corps, and the 5th Division was

Digitized by Google

soon involved in the hardest of the fighting. Every man who could pull a trigger was in the firing line, and the Germans were beaten back again and again with terrible losses. Yet their enormous numbers and overwhelming artillery fire enabled them to attack repeatedly, gaining ground everywhere, but at enormous cost. The Dorsets fought gallantly that day, suffering great losses, but clinging to every bit of cover, and meeting each German advance with well-directed rapid fire. Most of the men were dropping with exhaustion through want of sleep, hard marching, and constant fighting; but they fought on with unflagging determination. Towards evening the effect of the British resistance told on the enemy, who, appalled by the terrible losses sustained, drew off, and so permitted the British to snatch a few hours' rest and continue the retirement. Eight thousand British casualties were sustained that day, but the German losses were more than twice that number. The British retirement was continued till the River Marne was crossed, where much-needed rest and reorganization were possible. Then, with the ranks refilled by welcome drafts from home, the battalions once more faced the Germans, but this time as attackers and not defenders. The Germans were everywhere driven back, and, with the British and French hard on their heels, had to retreat across the Marne and the Aisne to the prepared defensive positions on the high ground beyond the latter river. The crossing of the Aisne by the British in the face of concentrated rifle and artillery fire was a splendid feat of arms, the 5th Division getting over by boats and temporary bridges between Missy and Condé. All the troops had to fight hard for a footing on the further bank, and, in spite of all resistance, succeeded. The 15th Brigade, after crossing, achieved a splendid success in storming the woods on the Chivres heights, which had been sown with wire entanglements, and in that assault the Dorsets figured prominently. For over a fortnight the struggle for the hills overlooking the river continued, the British gaining a few yards at

Digitized by Google

a time, till the enemy had been driven back to other positions in rear. Then the British Army was relieved by French troops and withdrawn, to be dispatched by road and rail to the Belgian border to stop an outflanking movement by fresh German troops. It was again a case of rapid marching and fierce fighting, and again the British proved successful, for the enemy was checked all along the line from Armentières to Dixmude, and thereafter could make little or no progress towards reaching the Channel ports as planned. The Dorsets experienced some heavy fighting in this operation, having to face a determined counter-attack launched by a whole division of Jaegers near the canal at Givenchy. The Dorsets put up a most stubborn fight, losing over 400 of all ranks, including their Commanding Officer wounded and Second-in-Command killed near Pont Fixe on October the 13th. The Germans barred the way to La Bassée, but were themselves brought to a final halt. The Dorsets defended the village of Violaines against a tremendous attack. The attack was beaten back, and the 1st Battalion, reduced to a skeleton, had to await further reinforcements to become an effective unit again, but, nevertheless, took part in most of the hard fighting which heralded the approach of winter on the Western Front.

The 2nd Battalion was equally heavily engaged in those early days of the war, for it formed part of the 16th Indian Brigade that in October, 1914, was dispatched to the Persian Gulf to open the operations in Mesopotamia. The Battalion was the only white unit in the Brigade. It occupied Basra, from which all the succeeding operations started. It fought with great gallantry at the Battle of Shaiba, where it was heavily engaged and suffered severe losses, including its Commanding Officer. While the 1st Battalion was enduring the wind, rain, frost and snow of trench warfare on the Western Front in that awful winter of 1914-15, the 2nd Battalion was enduring the sand, flies, heat and hardships of the terrible early stages of the Mesopotamian

Digitized by Google

campaign. Both had to fight constantly, and endure sad losses, but the same splendid spirit animated both battalions, and helped them to overcome all difficulties and face all dangers. The 2nd Battalion experienced great hardships throughout General Townshend's campaign, winning the highest praise for the fortitude displayed in the incessant desert marching and fighting which resulted in the driving back of the Turkish forces to Kut, the great British victory there and at Ctesiphon, and the retirement to and stubborn defence of Kut-al-Amara.

After the defence of Kut-al-Amara the Battalion was re-formed, and took part in the capture of Baghdad, March 11th, 1917, and subsequently was transferred to Palestine and took part in the operations and final victory over the Turks under General Allenby, pursuing the enemy as far as Damascus.

The 1/4th Battalion served in India during the early part of the war, where, on account of the motto " Primus in Indis," the 4th Battalion was the first Territorial battalion to land. In 1916 the Battalion proceeded to Mesopotamia, where it took part in operations on the Euphrates and was present at the Battle of Rumadi.

The 2/4th Battalion, after a short term of service in India, went to Palestine and joined the 75th Division, and was present at the capture of Jerusalem.

The 1st Battalion added a splendid chapter to the history of the Regiment by the heroic defence of Hill 60 in the spring of 1915, when subjected to dense clouds of poison gas. One historian says:—" The greenish gas came stealing out of the German trenches and eddied round the hill, and finally submerged the summit, where the brave men of the Dorsets in the trenches were strangled by the chlorine as they lay motionless and silent, examples of a discipline as stern as that of the Roman sentry at Herculaneum. So dense were the fumes that the Germans dare not take possession, and it was reinforcements of the Devons and

Digitized by Google

Bedfords who were first to reach their murdered comrades, either fixed in death or writhing in agonies of choking."

In the meantime the Territorials and Service Battalions of the Regiment had been mobilized and raised, and after a period of strenuous training at home they followed each other overseas. The 5th Battalion formed part of that glorious 11th Division that landed in Gallipoli and fought against every disadvantage of position, numbers, climate, material and supplies. Food and water were unobtainable, except what was carried by the soldiers, yet there was no more hesitation in attacking the enemy so favourably situated and skilfully directed than was the case in Egypt in 1801. The Dorsets got their full share of the fighting, yet when withdrawn to land in Suvla Bay to outflank the enemy position were as full of spirit and zeal as when the battalion left England. When the Gallipoli enterprise failed and the division was withdrawn, it soon reappeared on the Western Front, and from 1916 onwards was almost constantly in action.

The 6th Battalion, as part of the 50th Brigade, 17th Division, worthily upheld the Regiment's good name in the battles of the Somme, where it at times was in close proximity to the 1st and 5th Battalions. The 1st Battalion, on being reorganized after its terrible losses, was sent as one of the Regular battalions to stiffen the 32nd Territorial Division, and set a splendid example to its keen comrades that enabled them to achieve wonderful results as storm troops. No troops fought better throughout the war than those of the 32nd Division, and their spirited attack on the Leipzig salient on the Somme on July 1st, 1916, stands out prominently in an action where every man was a hero. The Commanding Officer of the 1st Dorsets was wounded, nearly half the battalion fell, but the Adjutant led the rest on to achieve a glorious victory, the Dorsets being the first into the Leipzig Redoubt. In the same battle the 6th Battalion was conspicuous in the attack on and capture of Fricourt, where losses were heavy, but the success great. On

Digitized by Google

July 9th the 1st Battalion was seen again in a grim battle for Ovilliers, in which the Prussian Guards were defeated, and on the 14th the Dorsets cut still farther into the German defences by a magnificent advance in the face of fierce opposition, destroying a maze of machine-gun posts and fortified points. In the same way the 6th Battalion earned undying fame for their share in the capture of Contalmaison. The 5th Battalion, recovered from its terrible experiences in the Gallipoli campaign, joined in the historic attack on Thiepval in September, 1916, losing heavily in the capture of Mouquet Farm. The 1st Battalion again distinguished itself on the Ancre in the attack of November 18th, when its timely arrival with a good stock of bombs saved the rest of the Brigade from a costly retirement.

The Dorsets spent the winter of 1916-17 in almost constant activity, and when the spring came all its battalions were sharing in the constant attacks being made on the Hindenburg Line. The 5th Battalion had the satisfaction of taking part in the attack on Beaumont Hamel, which yielded a crop of nearly 2,000 prisoners, besides many guns. The 5th Battalion was again heavily engaged in the desperate fighting of the Battle of Arras, while the 1st Battalion was similarly employed in the St. Quentin sector. Throughout that year the Dorsets were only out of the line for brief periods for essential rest and reorganization, whilst from England came a steady flow of reinforcements, prepared and trained by the 3rd Battalion to fill the gaps in the ranks. The third Battle of Ypres brought further honour to the Regiment, for it shared in the attacks on Poelcappelle and Polderhoek, and by the end of the year it had experienced some of the hardest fighting and shared in most of the desperate ventures along the whole British line.

Each battalion during the almost continuous fighting sustained such grievous losses that it had to renew its entire strength over and over again, but the fine regimental spirit was maintained undiminished throughout. Then, in the spring of 1918, the Germans, in one last despairing venture, tried to snatch the victory that had

Digitized by Google

been slowly but surely setting in favour of the Allies. The whole of the man and gun power of Germany, together with all her available resources, was thrown into that last great desperate attack which in March was launched against the British Fourth Army around St. Quentin. Overborne by sheer weight of numbers, the British fell back, fighting grimly for every inch of ground; and although unceasingly hammered and battered by veritable tempests of bombs, shells, bullets, flame and gas day and night for three weeks on end, the British line bent but did not break. Battalions, the Dorsets among them, sacrificed themselves to stem the onrush of the German swarms, and to gain precious time for the construction of defensive lines in rear. The enemy were mown down literally in thousands, but still came on till the whole of the available British and French reserves were drawn into the fight, and the onrush was stopped. The British losses were terrible, but the Germans had expended their full strength and had failed to accomplish their object. For a brief period there was comparatively desultory fighting, while from England new battalions and batteries were being swiftly transported to the battle front to replace the losses and prepare for the great counter-attack that was to sweep the Germans back in utter confusion, and to finally smash their boasted impregnable defence lines. In that great final advance the Regiment figured most gallantly. The 6th Battalion, on August 24th, was instrumental in recapturing Pozières, clearing up with great energy and initiative the enemy's trenches, and wading through mud and water to the capture of a large number of prisoners. Again, at Le Transloy, on September 2nd, they exhibited the customary Dorsetshire dash, clearing up the ruins of the sugar factory in a smart and thorough manner, so enabling the division on their flank to get forward. The 1st Battalion showed splendid enterprise and fighting quality in the general advance, nothing being able to stop them for long. The enemy sprinkled the whole ground over which he retired with a multitude of machine-gun nests, needing the

Digitized by Google

highest form of courage to advance against and capture. Many of these death-dealing contrivances were rushed and captured by the 1st Battalion, and at length, when the Oise-Sambre Canal was reached, the battalion joined in the last general attack that hurled the enemy back to the Rhine and compelled Berlin to sue for peace. In the crossing of the canal the battalion again showed splendid dash, getting over on wobbly bridges made of petrol tins in the face of heavy fire, and routing the enemy out with the bayonet. Right up to the end the Dorsets pushed on, traversing some of the ground over which the 1st Battalion had passed in the retirement from Mons four years before. The enemy was given no rest or respite, and at length, in that fateful November, came the fluttering of white flags and the plea for an armistice, the granting of which, on November 11th, brought to an end the actual fighting of the greatest war in history.

The Dorsetshire Regiment can well be proud of the part its battalions played in the titanic struggle. It was put to the supreme test, and was never found wanting. In attack it showed splendid dash, and in defence a stubborn determination, which on many occasions proved of inestimable value. The long roll of casualties speaks eloquently of the desperate nature of its valour, while the large number of honours, distinctions and decorations awarded to members of the Regiment is equal testimony to the gallantry which inspired the noble deeds that won recognition. But it can be safely asserted that for every gallant deed that won recognition there were scores of others which none but the enemy knew. Dorset men have every reason to be proud of the Regiment that bears the county title, while to the present members of the Regiment there is bequeathed a splendid legacy in the form of a glorious record of duty well done. Such will surely inspire present and future members of the Regiment to the highest conception of duty, and a certain resolve to be worthy of such splendid traditions.

Digitized by Google

A Short History of

THE DUKE OF CORNWALL'S LIGHT INFANTRY

1702—1945

COMPILED BY
LAWRENCE S. SNELL

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY OF THE DUKE OF CORNWALL'S LIGHT INFANTRY

1702—1945

Compiled by

LAWRENCE S. SNELL

GALE & POLDEN LIMITED, ALDERSHOT

Digitized by Google

THE TYPOGRAPHY AND PAPER OF THIS BOOK CONFORMS TO THE AUTHORIZED ECONOMY STANDARD

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY
GALE AND POLDEN LIMITED
ALDERSHOT
1945

P798

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

THIS little book has been written to give a comprehensive view of the history of the D.C.L.I. from its beginning to the present time. It is hoped that it will be found useful by the officers and men of the battalions of the Regiment and particularly by the pre-service battalions of the Army Cadet Force affiliated to the D.C.L.I.

I am most grateful to Mr. F. L. Harris, M.A., J.P., for encouragement, advice and criticism of the manuscript, and for similar reading and criticism undertaken by Serjt. W. J. Harris, A.E.C., and Mr. Claude Berry of the *West Briton*.

I am also indebted to Major W. C. Mills, D.C.L.I., for his kindness in allowing me access to the Depot Library and in particular to Fortescue's " History of the British Army," and to the Lord Lieutenant of Cornwall for consenting to write a Foreword.

L. S. SNELL.

BODMIN
1945

Digitized by Google

FOREWORD

BY COLONEL E. H. W. BOLITHO, C.B., D.S.O.
Lord Lieutenant of Cornwall

ALL Cornishmen are naturally proud of the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry. It is therefore more than appropriate that Serjeant L. S. Snell gives us this short history at a moment when the Regiment is covering itself with glory for the second time in Holland. To-day it is Xanten, in 1809 it was Walcheren.

The time is too near to the actual fighting to judge matters in their true perspective, but I have no doubt that when history comes to be written the actions of battalions of the Regiment in North Africa, in Italy, in Normandy and in Holland will rank with, if not excel in merit, the great deeds of one hundred years or more ago.

I would especially commend this short history to the officers of all ranks who are giving so much of their time to the training of the Cadets of the Regiment in this county. The boys must aim at following in the footsteps of those noble gentlemen of whom we read, never forgetting the "Red Feathers" and the fact that even to-day the Union Jack of the Lucknow Residency is never hauled down by night.

Digitized by Google

THE BATTLE HONOURS

Borne on the Regimental Colour		*Borne on the King's Colour*
" GIBRALTAR, 1704-5 "	" PENINSULA "	" MONS "
" DETTINGEN "	" WATERLOO "	" MARNE, 1914 "
" ST. LUCIA, 1778 "	" MOOLTAN "	" YPRES, 1915-17 "
" DOMINICA "	" GOOJERAT "	" SOMME, 1916-18 "
" ROLICA "	" PUNJAUB "	" ARRAS, 1917 "
" VIMIERA "	" SEVASTOPOL "	" PASSCHENDAELE "
" CORUNNA "	" LUCKNOW "	" CAMBRAI, 1917-18 "
" SALAMANCA "	" TEL-EL-KEBIR "	" SAMBRE "
" PYRENEES "	" EGYPT, 1882 "	" DOIRAN, 1917-18 "
" NIVELLE "	" NILE, 1884-5 "	" GAZA "
" NIVE "	" PAARDEBERG "	
" ORTHES "	" SOUTH AFRICA, 1899-1902 "	

THE GREAT WAR—ENGAGEMENTS

" MONS," " Le Cateau," " Retreat from Mons," " MARNE, 1914," " Aisne, 1914," " La Bassee, 1914," " Armentieres," " YPRES, 1915, '17," " Gravenstafel," " St. Julien," " Frezenberg," " Bellewaarde," " Hooge, 1915," " Mount Sorrel," " SOMME, 1916, '18," " Delville Wood," " Guillemont," " Flers-Courcelette," " Morval," " Le Transloy," " Ancre, 1916," " Bapaume, 1917, '18," " ARRAS, 1917," " Vimy, 1917," " Scarpe, 1917," " Arleux," " Langemarck, 1917," " Menin Road," " Polygon Wood," " Broodseinde," " Poelcappelle," " PASSCHENDAELE," " CAMBRAI, 1917, '18," " St. Quentin," " Rosieres," " Lys," " Estaires," " Hazebrouck," " Albert, 1918," " Hindenburg Line," " Havrincourt," " Canal du Nord," " Selle," " SAMBRE," " France and Flanders, 1914-18," " Italy, 1917-18," " Struma," " DOIRAN, 1917, '18," " Macedonia, 1915-18," " GAZA," " Nebi Samwil," " Jerusalem," " Tel 'Asur," " Megiddo," " Sharon," " Palestine, 1917-18," " Aden."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

1st BATTALION

King's Colour Regimental Colour

2nd BATTALION

King's Colour Regimental Colour

Digitized by Google

PRIVATE, 1765

Digitized by Google

A Short History of

THE DUKE OF CORNWALL'S LIGHT INFANTRY

The Raising of the 32nd Regiment (Fox's Marines)

1702 The Regiment we now know as the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry was raised in 1702 as one of the several new regiments needed for the struggle with France in the War of the Spanish Succession. The main events leading up to the outbreak of this war must be examined briefly in order to understand more clearly the situation in Europe at the time.

William and Mary ascended the English throne in 1688 as a result of the "Glorious Revolution," which caused the abdication of James II. As Stadholder of the Dutch Republic, William III had been the leader of those European statesmen who were opposed to any increase in the power of France, whose King at that time was the ambitious "Grand Monarch," Louis XIV, and he was acceptable as King of England largely because his policy was also the true English policy, namely, to see that neither France nor any other nation became dominant over Europe. This policy and intention has been behind most of our great wars in modern times.

From 1689 to 1697 England was engaged in a war with France which was brought to an end by the inconclusive Peace of Ryswick, both sides having fought themselves to a standstill. This peace, however, was to be a short one as trouble was brewing in Europe over the question of who should succeed to the Spanish throne when Charles II should die. The Spanish dominions included Spain, the Netherlands, Milan, Naples and the Spanish possessions in the "Indies." It was considered that the peace of Europe would be threatened if these lands passed to a claimant who was already a powerful European sovereign, and there was in Europe no government which did not feel that its own prosperity and security might depend on that event. The lands were claimed by Louis XIV, by the Emperor, Leopold II, of Austria, and by the son of the Elector of Bavaria. By the first Partition Treaty, in 1698, it

Digitized by Google

was agreed by Louis and William that the lands should be divided—Spain, the Netherlands and the " Indies " to go to the Electoral Prince, Milan to the Archduke Charles of Austria, and Naples to the heir to the French throne, who was known as the Dauphin—but this treaty was rendered useless by the death of the Electoral Prince. The second Partition Treaty of 1700 gave Spain, the Netherlands and the " Indies " to the Archduke Charles, and Naples and Milan to the Dauphin.

In 1700 Charles II of Spain died, leaving a will nominating Philip, Duke of Anjou, second son of the Dauphin, as heir to the whole Empire of Spain, and Louis XIV immediately accepted the throne on behalf of his grandson. This violation of the second Partition Treaty made France supreme in Europe and very dangerous to England. It meant that she controlled almost the whole of the coast-line of the North Sea up to the borders of Holland, and made it possible for her to exclude the English and Dutch fleets from the Mediterranean. In addition, possession of the ports of Ostend, Nieuport and Antwerp gave her suitable bases for the invasion of England. Despite these dangers, William had great difficulty in persuading Parliament that England's security was seriously endangered At this time, however, the exiled James II died in France, and Louis XIV, in repudiation of the Treaty of Ryswick, recognised and proclaimed the son of the former monarch as King of England. He also seized the barrier fortresses in the Netherlands, which since 1679 had been garrisoned by Dutch troops. These actions infuriated the English people and Parliament felt that no trust could be put in Louis XIV ; and the Grand Alliance of England, Holland and Austria was formed again.

As a result of this declaration of war, regiments which had been disbanded in 1697 were hastily re-formed, and several new regiments were raised, including six of marines. These marines were very necessary in a war against great naval powers like France and Spain. They were used for hand-to-hand fighting on the decks of the ships when it was possible to manœuvre close enough to the enemy for these soldiers of the sea to be used as boarding parties. One of the new marine regiments was later to become the 32nd Regiment of Foot and subsequently the 1st Battalion The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry, but originally it was known by the name of its Colonel and was called Fox's Marines. The earliest recruits for the Regiment appear to have been obtained in Sussex and the

Digitized by Google

adjoining counties. Its connection with Cornwall coming later in its history. The Regiment was originally made up of twelve companies, each consisting of 2 serjeants, 3 corporals, 2 drummers and 59 private soldiers. The document authorising the formation of Colonel Fox's Marines was signed on 13th March, 1702, by Queen Anne, who had succeeded to the throne a few days earlier.

Early War Services—Spain and Gibraltar

1702 Colonel Fox and his marines were sent to Spain in July, 1702, and formed part of a force of some ten thousand English and Dutch under the joint command of the Duke of Ormonde and Admiral Sir George Rooke, charged with the capture of Cadiz, an important port on the south-west coast of Spain. The expedition was a complete failure, chiefly because the two commanders could not agree or work together, and it was forced to withdraw. The Regiment, however, earned a mention in despatches, because of Colonel Fox's masterly handling of the rearguard action which enabled the re-embarkation of the armies to be carried out successfully. On the way home Fox's Marines earned the highest possible praise for their conduct in an attack upon the Spanish treasure ships in Vigo Bay. On 12th October, 1702, Admiral Rooke arrived off Vigo and decided to attack the town and harbour. A force, including Fox's Marines, was landed and carried the battery commanding the bay by storm, the town and harbour eventually being taken. Twenty-five galleons, containing treasure valued at over a million pounds, fell into British hands. This compensated somewhat for the failure at Cadiz and the fleet returned to England, where the victory was hailed with extravagant joy. For two years after this the Regiment was stationed in Portsmouth.

1704 In 1704 Fox's Marines were part of a force under Sir George Rooke and Prince George of Hesse-Darmstadt which surprised and captured the fortress of Gibraltar. In those days the great importance of this capture was realised by very few, as its intrinsic value was small and its strategic value little understood. Prince George and about two thousand five hundred English and Dutch marines were left to hold the Rock. They were well provisioned and armed with sixty heavy guns, and immediately set about the task of repairing the damaged fortifications against possible attacks by French and

Digitized by Google

Spanish forces. These repairs were only just completed in time : at the end of August the fortress was attacked from the land side by a force of about eight thousand Spanish troops, and a month later by a powerful French force from the sea. In the early days of the siege Colonel Fox was killed and his place was taken by a Colonel Jacob Borr, the Regiment taking the name of Borr's Marines. The siege went on for several months, both sides getting reinforcements at irregular intervals. At times things looked black for the gallant defenders, especially in November, 1704, when they had been reduced to about one thousand men, and again in January, 1705, when the enemy, strongly reinforced, made a breach in the great Round Tower and almost succeeded in getting a hold on the main fortress ; but they held on heroically until, in March, 1705, Admiral Leake's fleet appeared, destroyed a great part of the French fleet, and finally relieved the fortress. Borr's Marines took a very active part in the struggle, and for their valour were granted the battle honour " Gibraltar, 1704-5," for the Regimental Colours. Now, when soldiers of the Regiment visit or hear about Gibraltar, they remember that there the Regiment lost its first Colonel and gained its first battle honour.

1705 In 1705 a force set out from England to help the Catalans, the only people in Spain holding out for the Archduke Charles. This force was reinforced at Gibraltar by the addition of eight battalions of marines, one of which was Borr's Marines. The commander, the Earl of Peterborough, decided to attack Barcelona, which had been represented at home as ill-fortified and ill-garrisoned, but he found it a very formidable fortress, well stocked with provisions and strongly garrisoned. After capturing the fort of Monjuich, lying three-quarters of a mile to the south-west of the city, he attacked Barcelona itself, with the assistance of the guns of the fleet. The city capitulated on 9th October, 1705, and a fortnight later King Charles III made his first public entry into the city.

1713 The Regiment continued to serve in Spain during the remaining years of the Spanish War, but it is difficult to trace its movements. After the signing of the Treaty of Utrecht, in 1713, the Regiment returned to England, where it was one of the many regiments disbanded as a measure of economy. One of the clauses of the Treaty of Utrecht recognised the British capture of Gibraltar from the Spanish, and this fortress has remained in our hands ever since.

Digitized by Google

The 32nd Regiment of Foot

1715 After only two years Borr's Marines were re-formed as an infantry regiment, but instead of bearing the title of its Colonel it was known as the 32nd Regiment of Foot, in accordance with the new policy of giving each regiment a number in order of precedence. The need for new regiments at this time was caused by the threat of the Pretender, James Edward, son of the exiled and now dead James II, who in 1715 made an attempt to win back the throne for the Stuarts. When his invasion was imminent, Parliament realised how weak the Army had become as a result of its policy after the Treaty of Utrecht, and immediate steps were taken to bring the Army up to the requisite strength. The Pretender found considerable support in Scotland, where the Highlanders under the Earl of Mar took up his cause, but the rebellion was quickly crushed and the country settled down to a period of comparative peace until 1740.

The War of the Austrian Succession—Price's Regiment

1741 In 1740 it was again necessary to raise new regiments, and in 1741 the 57th Regiment of Foot was formed under the command of Colonel John Price. It is interesting to notice that the Regiment was made up of ten companies, each company having 3 serjeants, 3 corporals, 2 drummers and 70 private soldiers. In 1743 Colonel The Honourable Thomas Murray, a former Guards officer, assumed command, and the Regiment was known as "Murray's Bucks" because of its smartness. The 57th eventually was re-numbered the 46th, and later became the 2nd Battalion The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry.

These new regiments were raised because of the need for British troops for service on the Continent in the War of the Austrian Succession. In 1740 the Emperor Charles VI of Austria died, leaving his throne and territories to his daughter, Maria Theresa. All the chief European countries had signed the Pragmatic Sanction by which they promised to support Maria Theresa after her father's death. When he died, however, claims to the territories were brought forward by Prussia, Spain, Bavaria and Saxony, and these claimants were supported by France. England, because of her hostility to France, supported Maria Theresa, and the country found itself involved in the war.

Digitized by Google

1743 The 32nd Regiment was sent to Flanders in 1742 as part of a force commanded by the Earl of Stair, and, in 1743, marched into Bavaria. King George II, arriving in June to take over command, found the position of the army to be perilous. It was confronted by a French army of about seventy thousand men which had crossed to the right bank of the Main above and below the Allied forces, which were in danger of being starved into surrender. The King decided to withdraw, but once again found himself in a serious position when the French surrounded his forces at Dettingen. The British infantry, however, attacked the enemy with their usual spirit and forced a way through their lines, and the army was able to complete its withdrawal. The casualties of the 32nd Regiment in this campaign were exceptionally light, only the Colonel and three men being wounded. For its services in the battle the Regiment was granted the name " Dettingen " as a battle honour.

This action was the last occasion on which an English King led his troops into battle, and was marred by an incident which might have had serious consequences. The King was nearly captured by the French when his horse bolted towards the enemy lines. Ultimately the animal's career was checked and the King, returning to the right of the line, carried on, shouting words of encouragement to his men.

1745 As a result of the fighting withdrawal at Dettingen, the main scene of action shifted from Bohemia to Belgium, and in 1745 the 32nd Regiment took part in the Battle of Fontenoy. In April of that year, Saxe, the French commander, laid siege to Tournai, and in March the Duke of Cumberland, who had just been appointed Commander-in-Chief, advanced to relieve it. He found the French across his path behind the village of Fontenoy, just within the present frontier of Belgium. The battle which followed ended in a British defeat, owing to the failure of the Dutch and Austrian troops to back up their British and Hanoverian allies. The British soldiers had done everything that courageous men could do to achieve victory, and their casualties exceeded four thousand men, of whom 139 of all ranks were of the 32nd Regiment.

The '45 (Jacobite) Rebellion

1745 After Fontenoy the bulk of the British troops (amongst them being the 32nd Regiment) were hurried back to England to oppose Prince Charles Stuart's invasion of Scotland.

Digitized by Google

The Young Pretender, after rallying the Highland clans around him, defeated the English General Cope at Prestonpans on 21st September, 1745, where the 57th Regiment formed part of the English forces. He then advanced as far south as Derby, but was forced to retreat, and the Battle of Culloden (1746) drove him to flight again.

The Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle

1748 The 32nd Regiment had been withdrawn from the Scottish struggle and sent back to Flanders in 1746, owing to the urgent need for fresh troops, and in 1747 took part in the Battle of Val, or Lauffeld, in which the English foot soldiers were badly supported by their Dutch and Austrian allies and forced to bear the brunt of the battle alone. Only the intervention of the cavalry saved the situation, and the army was able to effect an orderly retreat. Both sides were now exhausted, and the War of the Austrian Succession was brought to an end by the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748. By this, Maria Theresa was allowed all her ancestral dominions with the exception of Silesia, which was ceded to Prussia. One of the minor results of the peace, as far as England was concerned, was the disbandment of several regiments. This made necessary the re-allocation of regimental numbers showing the order of precedence, and the 57th Regiment became known as the 46th Regiment of Foot.

Wreck of the "Rockingham Castle"

1775 After 1748 the English people enjoyed a few years of peace, during which the 32nd Regiment served in Gibraltar and in the North of England. It remained in England until 1764, when it was sent abroad to the island of St. Vincent in the West Indies. In 1773 the Regiment returned to England, stayed a short time at Wells and at Salisbury, and then moved to Ireland (1775). During this move the transport *Rockingham Castle*, in which the Headquarters, three companies, all the women and children, and the regimental records had embarked, was wrecked outside Cork harbour. The records and practically all the valuable regimental property were lost. Over 90 members of the Regiment were drowned with the captain and crew of the vessel.

The Seven Years' War

1756 In 1756 the Seven Years' War broke out between England and Prussia on the one hand and France,

Digitized by Google

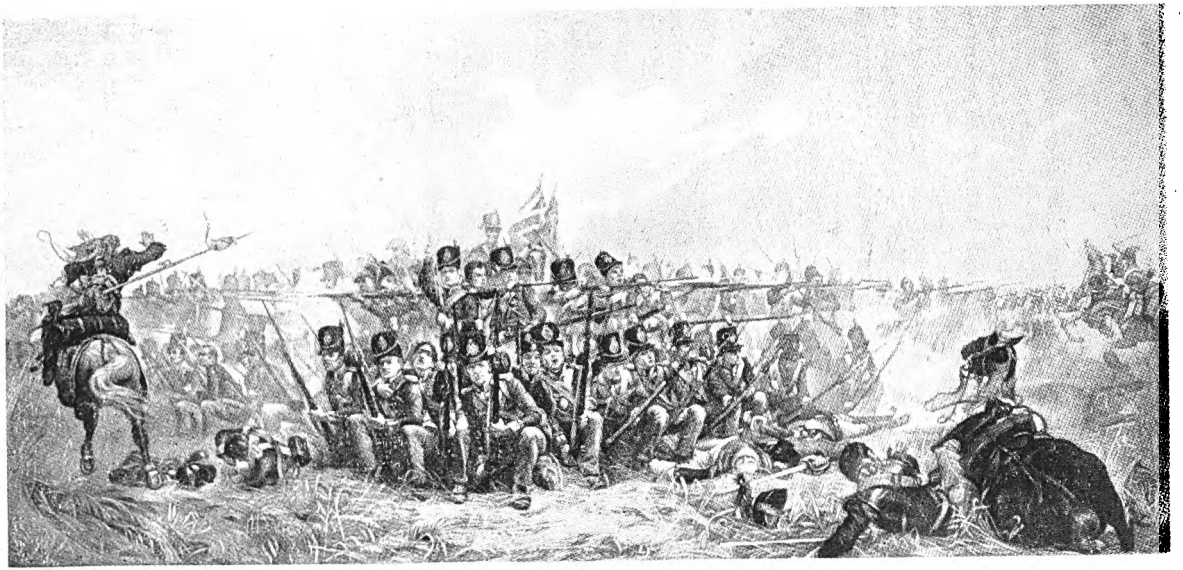
Austria and Russia on the other. Maria Theresa had persuaded France to help her regain Silesia from Prussia, and Russia joined the coalition because of her jealousy of the growing power of Prussia. The struggle between France and England took place for the most part in America and India. In 1757 the 46th Regiment embarked for Canada, which was then a French possession, and in 1758 took part in the attack upon Fort Ticonderoga. This attack was unsuccessful because of the impregnable position of the fort, which was situated on a tongue of land jutting into the lakes on either side. Across the promontory, with both flanks resting upon the water, Montcalm had erected a log parapet, nine feet in height, which was guarded by an impenetrable abattis. Trees had also been felled before the fort and the branches left facing the attackers. Full of courage, but knowing nothing of these obstacles, the British attacked boldly, but were driven back time and time again by the storm of grape and musketry which met them. Before the order to retire was given, the 46th Regiment had lost at least two hundred men, including 7 officers killed. In 1759 concerted attacks were made on all French strong points, the 46th Regiment forming part of a force which attacked and captured Fort Niagara. Other forces during the same year captured Ticonderoga and Quebec, and the conquest of Canada was completed in 1760, when the French in Montreal surrendered after being attacked by a large force which included the 46th Regiment. It is difficult to understand why the contribution made by the Regiment to the conquest of Canada was not recognised by the grant of a battle honour.

The West Indies

1762 With the conquest of Canada the British, having an undisputed command of the sea, decided to attack the rich islands of the French West Indies. In 1762 a force was collected at Barbadoes in preparation for an attack upon the island of Martinique. This force included the 46th Regiment and ten others drawn from America, the total strength being about eight thousand men. After much hard fighting Martinique was captured, and detachments were sent to the islands of St. Lucia, Grenada and St. Vincent, which submitted without offering resistance.

In the meantime England had declared war on Spain after

Digitized by Google



Reproduced by permission of the Fine Art Society] [*From a painting by Lady Butler*

QUATRE BRAS

Digitized by Google

From the picture by R. Caton Woodville, by permission of the Illustrated London News]

The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry at Brandywine Creek, September 20th, 1777

Digitized by Google

the discovery of a secret treaty between the King of Spain and the King of France, by which the Spanish undertook to support the French in military operations. Troops withdrawn from the West Indies and from America were dispatched under the command of the Earl of Albemarle to capture the wealthy Spanish town of Havannah in the island of Cuba. Amongst the regiments taking part in this operation the 46th is mentioned as coming from America. The siege lasted only six weeks, but this was not a moment too soon for Albemarle, whose forces were melting away because of sickness. For every man killed by enemy fire, five men died as a result of sickness. In 1763 peace with France and Spain was proclaimed by the Treaty of Fountainebleau, the terms of which were very favourable to England. The war decided the colonial rivalry between France and England. France lost all political influence in India, was driven out of North America, and lost most of her colonial empire to England.

The American War of Independence—The Red Feathers

1775 The disappearance of the French flag from North America led to the disruption of the British colonies in that continent, for the thirteen colonies no longer stood in need of English protection. Political grievances were not deep, but the colonists had real cause for dissatisfaction at the commercial policy of England, especially at attempts to interfere with trade and with the growth of manufactures in the colonies. The settlers resented attempts to impose taxes on them, and in 1775 war broke out between the colonists and the Mother Country. The 46th Regiment and several other similar units were sent out from England in 1776. During the summer of that year the Regiment took part in the capture of Long Island, New York, and Fort Washington, and during the winter months was employed on escort duty with ammunition convoys. In 1777 the 46th Regiment formed part of a force ordered to attack Philadelphia. This force defeated an American army at Brandywine Creek, but found itself harassed by guerilla warfare conducted by the American General Washington. A detachment of one thousand five hundred Americans under General Wayne was employed in ambushing parties of troops detached from the main British army and was known to be lying in a forest at Paoli, quite near a British encampment. General Sir William Howe, commanding the British forces,

Digitized by Google

dispatched Major-General Charles Grey with a battalion made up of the Light Companies of six regiments, one of which was the 46th Regiment, to surprise and destroy this American band of guerillas. The attack took place during the night of 20th September, 1777, when the British, having silently overpowered the outposts, rushed the Americans with their bayonets and gained a complete victory. Three hundred Americans were killed and wounded, and a great many taken prisoner. British losses were exceptionally light, only three men being killed and a few wounded. Since the Americans after this engagement vowed that they would be revenged upon the regiments concerned, the soldiers of the Light Companies, wishing to prevent anyone not engaged in the action from suffering on their account, sent word to the colonists that they would stain red the white feathers in their hats as a distinguishing mark. After the war the 46th Regiment's Light Company was the only company to retain the red feather, and eventually permission was granted for the whole Regiment to wear it. The red patch behind the cap-badge, the red pugaree on the foreign service full-dress helmet, and the red hackle on the shako carry on this tradition.

St. Lucia

1778 After the successful attack at Paoli the British force marched on Philadelphia and captured it. They remained in this city until 1778, when they returned to New York. In the meantime the French had sent troops to help the Americans and had captured the West Indian island of Dominica. On 4th November, 1778, the 46th Regiment embarked at New York for Barbadoes, with about five thousand other troops, under the command of General Grant. They reached Barbadoes on the 10th December, but after waiting only one day sailed for St. Lucia, an island near Martinique, where the troops landed almost without resistance. Soon, however, the French fleet appeared and began to land troops, and General Grant was committed to a battle against a superior force. Outnumbered by more than four to one, the British, by the crushing nature of their fire, inflicted on their French opponents a loss greater than their own total strength. The battle honour " St. Lucia," granted to the regiments taking part, worthily commemorates this event. After this defeat the French were forced to withdraw, and the Governor of the island surrendered to the British. In 1779 the 46th Regiment,

Digitized by Google

with another regiment, embarked as marines on Commodore Byron's fleet off Grenada. In this struggle the marines had lost seventy-four killed and wounded. Peace was finally made in 1783. Certain of the West Indian islands changed hands, Britain ceded Florida and Minorca to Spain, but kept Gibraltar, whilst the independence of the American colonies was recognised.

Regiments given County Titles

1782 The first connection of the Regiment with Cornwall came in 1782, when it was decided to establish a link between a county and each regiment to help in the recruiting drive. In accordance with this policy the 32nd Regiment became the Cornwall Regiment, and the 46th Regiment was known as the South Devonshire Regiment.

War with Revolutionary France

1793 The years 1793 to 1815 saw the last great struggles between this country and France. Once again England was fighting to prevent one country from becoming dominant on the Continent. The invasion of the Low Countries by the French Revolutionary armies could not be passed unchallenged, and, except for a brief interlude, 1802-3, the conflict lasted until the overthrow of Napoleon at Waterloo.

1794 In 1794 the 46th Regiment was dispatched to the West Indies and, during 1795-96, was used to suppress an insurrection of natives on the island of St. Vincent. (It will be remembered that the 46th Regiment had helped to capture St. Vincent from the French in 1762.) The natives had been stirred up against the British by French agents, who had hoped thereby to draw away large numbers of British troops from the European war zone. When the Regiment arrived from England it was sent to Kingston, where it helped first of all to drive the insurgents from the lower ground into the mountains. Later on, on 26th April, a party of black rangers, with a few blue-jackets and thirty men of the 46th Regiment, attacked and took a Carib camp with extraordinary gallantry. On 12th May, Lieut.-Colonel Leighton of the 46th, with his own regiment and reinforcements, stormed a strong position called Vigie, destroying over two hundred of the rebels and capturing their commandant. After severe fighting all the summer a column

Digitized by Google

of the 46th, assisted by a detachment from the 60th Regiment, marched all night through deep woods and ravines and attacked the insurgents' position above Chateau Belair. They managed to drive the enemy into the woods with heavy losses, capturing two guns. The 46th Regiment lost over one-third of the men it sent on this expedition—that is, 1 officer and 44 men. The insurrection was not finally suppressed until 1796. The Regiment's losses during these long months from fighting and sickness were extremely heavy, and in 1796 it had to be sent back to England to recruit and reorganise.

The 32nd Regiment in the West Indies

1796 It will be recalled that the 32nd Regiment went to Ireland in 1775. It stayed there until 1783, after which it served in Gibraltar and in the West Indies. After a period of home service the Regiment was ordered to return to the West Indies in 1794, but was prevented from doing so because of an accident to the troopship *Thomas*, which broke its moorings in Plymouth Harbour and became a wreck. In 1796 the 32nd Regiment sailed to the West Indies with Sir Ralph Abercromby to relieve the English settlers in St. Domingo, where there had been an extensive rising of slaves on the plantations. After a year of great hardship, owing to the fighting and to the severe climate, the Regiment returned to England, where it was stationed at Guildford, Tavistock and Launceston.

Return of the 46th Regiment to the West Indies—Dominica

1804 In 1804 the 46th Regiment returned to the West Indies, where they landed on the island of Dominica. The island was attacked on 22nd February, 1805, by a strong French fleet of ten ships carrying four thousand men. In spite of the French fleet flying the British colours, the enemy failed to gain the intended surprise, for their trickery was discovered by General Prevost, commander of the British forces, and fire from his batteries forced the French fleet to lie off shore. Early in the morning the French landed about two thousand men, who advanced to attack the town of Roseau and were engaged by a small force of defenders, which included one company of two hundred men of the 46th Regiment. Desperate fighting followed and the invader was thrown back with heavy losses.

Digitized by Google

At nine o'clock the French landed another strong detachment north of Roseau, at the foot of Morne Daniel. The main force of defenders, consisting of militia, gallantly attacked the landing force until they were driven off the beaches by the guns of the French fleet. The French were delayed by the strong defence of a small redoubt on Morne Daniel by a serjeant of the 46th Regiment with four of his own men, five men of the West India Regiment and a few militia, with one three-pounder gun. This tiny garrison held out against repeated attacks until only four men remained, and the redoubt was carried by sheer weight of numbers. After fighting hard for the island for five days the French were forced to abandon their attempt and sail away. The inhabitants of Dominica expressed their gratitude to the 46th Regiment for their magnificent defence of the island, by presenting the officers with a set of table silver, which is still to be seen in the Officers' Mess of the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. to-day. Royal authority was later received for the 46th Regiment to bear the word " Dominica " on the Regimental Colours " as a distinguished mark of good conduct and exemplary valour displayed by the Regiment in the defence of the island against a very superior French force on 22nd February, 1805."

In 1806 the island of Dominica was swept by a terrific hurricane which tore the barracks to pieces and caused heavy casualties in the 46th Regiment. The Officers' Mess of the 46th Regiment, which had lost all its plate and linen in the French raid of 1805, was stripped again of its treasures. The story is told of a gallant soldier of the 46th whose duty it was to guard the Regimental Colours. Even when the hurricane was at its height he refused to leave his post, and was buried alive with his precious charge under the ruins of a house. When the hurricane had passed he was dug out and lived long enough to know that the colours were safe.

Copenhagen

1807 In 1807 the 32nd Regiment, which had remained in England, formed part of a large force of eighteen thousand men which was dispatched to attack Copenhagen, to prevent the French from seizing the Danish fleet and bases and using them against England. Copenhagen was captured and the Danish fleet brought to England. The 32nd Regiment was specially thanked for its share in the operation by both Houses of Parliament.

Digitized by Google

The First Peninsular Campaign

1808 In 1808 the 32nd Regiment formed part of an expedition sent to Spain to oppose the French. In February, 1808, Napoleon had invaded Spain, obtained possession of a number of frontier fortresses, occupied Madrid and proclaimed his brother, Joseph, to be King of Spain. The Spanish people rose against the invader on 2nd May, 1808, and asked the British Government for help. The Government sent out an expedition under Sir Arthur Wellesley, which landed at Mondego Bay, in Portugal, and proceeded to advance on Lisbon. Shortly after landing, the British forces were engaged in a brisk action at Rolica against an advanced French detachment under General Delaborde. In this action the 32nd Regiment fought in Major-General Spencer's corps and appear to have put 874 men into the field. The village of Rolica was taken from the French after very heavy fighting on 17th August, and Wellesley pushed on to Vimiera, where he took up a position to cover the disembarkation of reinforcements. On 21st August the British were attacked by a large French army under Junot, but Wellesley's reinforced army was too strong and the French were utterly defeated. After the armistice which followed this battle the British were able to make an unopposed entry into Lisbon.

Corunna

1809 Sir John Moore took over command of the British troops towards the end of 1808 and decided to march on Madrid. The advance started in October, but by the third week in November, Moore learned that the Spanish armies near Madrid had been defeated, and in December he further learned that the French had left Madrid and were marching to Salamanca to cut off the British forces. Not being certain of the position of the French army, Moore decided to withdraw to Corunna, to embark there, and to escape by sea. The retreat was carried out under the most difficult of conditions in the middle of winter, the country being either buried in snow or deluged with heavy rain. Fuel and food were short, and baggage had to be destroyed frequently to prevent it falling into the hands of the French. During this difficult march the 32nd Regiment acted as escort to the stores and ammunition, and suffered very great hardships. When he arrived at Corunna, Moore found that the transports he had ordered had not

Digitized by Google

arrived, and he was forced to prepare for an engagement with the French forces, which were close on his heels. In the battle which followed on 16th January, 1809, the French were forced to retire after four hours' heavy fighting in which casualties on both sides were high. Sir John Moore, the English commander, was himself killed, and from an official despatch we learn that the 32nd Regiment " fought with great resolution and losing two hundred and fifty men of all ranks, covered themselves with glory." The repulse of the French gave the British the opportunity to embark, and the fleet returned to England. The thanks of both Houses of Parliament was voted to the Regiment " for its distinguished discipline, firmness and valour in the battle of Corunna."

Walcheren

1809 The 32nd Regiment was re-equipped for active service at Horsham and, after a short rest in England, was chosen to take part in the great expedition to Walcheren in 1809, the purpose of which was to capture Antwerp and the French fleet, and so stir up revolution in France. The 32nd Regiment was present at the capture of Walcheren and earned high praise from its brigade commander. He said " that when the 32nd was on the advanced posts, he could sleep soundly." During this campaign the army suffered badly from fever, Walcheren being situated on flat plains reclaimed from the sea, and intersected with dykes of stagnant water. It is estimated that over four thousand men of the army died of fever, and the 32nd Regiment was reduced at one time to two hundred men. The expedition did not succeed either in stirring up revolution in France or in capturing Antwerp. At the conclusion of the campaign the 32nd Regiment formed part of the garrison at Walcheren and was quartered at Middelburg, where it remained until December, 1809. During the years 1810-11 the Regiment was stationed at Bexhill and in Guernsey. This rest enabled the men to recover from the Walcheren fever and to train new recruits sent to make the Regiment up to strength.

Guadaloupe

1810 During the years of the first Peninsula campaign the 46th Regiment had remained in the island of Dominica, and in 1809 the flank companies formed part of a force of eleven thousand men which captured the French island of Martinique. In the following year the flank companies were

Digitized by Google

chosen to take part in another expedition, this time to the island of Guadaloupe. The men of the 46th were mentioned in dispatches, the divisional commander saying that the Grenadiers of the 46th Regiment "in truth behaved most admirably."

The Second Peninsular Campaign

1811 In 1811 the 32nd Regiment returned to the Peninsula, where it joined Wellington's army and, in 1812, it took part in the siege of Salamanca. Wellington's army was seriously delayed owing to the resistance of the forts surrounding the city. The first and most important of these was named San Vincente, having been built around a large convent of that name. It stood on a perpendicular cliff above the Tormes, at the south-west angle of the town, and was connected with Salamanca by a line of works. This strong fort held out for ten days against a British force until a storming party, led by Ensign Newton, of the 32nd Regiment, succeeded in capturing it. After blowing up the fort the British detachment marched away and joined the main army. The ten days' delay in storming the forts enabled the French to bring up reinforcements amounting to fourteen thousand men, and, because of this, Wellington decided to retreat and fell back on a line covering Salamanca. Marmont, the French general, made a false move in splitting his forces, and this enabled Wellington to move in to the attack. The French were taken completely by surprise and routed, losing fourteen thousand men and twenty guns at a cost of only five thousand killed and wounded on the English side. In this battle the 32nd Regiment fought valiantly, its casualties being 17 killed and 130 wounded. Wellington, in his dispatches, mentioned the bravery of Colonel Hinde of the 32nd Regiment. Unfortunately, the gallant Ensign Newton, hero of the attack upon Fort San Vincente, was killed during this action. A big drum, which the Regiment had lost during the battle of Corunna, was recovered from the French at Salamanca.

With the French in retreat, Wellington made a triumphal entry into Madrid and moved on quickly to the siege of Burgos. This operation, however, was badly mismanaged by Wellington, and had to be given up in the face of strong enemy concentrations. During this siege the army suffered severely from sickness, and the 32nd Regiment, which took part, had six hundred out of its total of seven hundred and fifty on the sick

Digitized by Google

list at one time. Wellington's retreat to Salamanca was skilfully conducted, although the men suffered very seriously from lack of supplies and bad weather. The roads were in a terrible condition, and it is a tribute to the march discipline of the 32nd Regiment that so few of these men fell out on the line of march. Wellington eventually retired into Portugal.

The Battles of Pyrenees, Nivelle, Nive and Orthes

1813 In 1813 the 32nd Regiment advanced into Spain with Wellington's army and was soon engaged in the battle of the Pyrenees. During this battle the 32nd were detailed for very special work in dislodging the enemy from a strongly fortified position at Saurorean. The Regiment successfully completed the operation, but lost its commanding officer, Lieut.-Colonel Wood, who fell in front of the colours. It is interesting to note that the Regiment came into contact with the French 32nd Regiment during this operation and captured ten of its drums.

In November of the same year the 32nd Regiment took part in Wellington's attack upon the French, who had taken up a very strong position on the River Nivelle. On 10th November the ninety thousand British, Spanish and Portugese troops attacked the French positions and captured 1,500 prisoners and 51 guns. The 32nd Regiment lost 8 men killed and 55 wounded during this action. A month later the Regiment took part in the successful attack upon the French line on the River Nive, and on 27th February, 1814, won the special praise of their divisional commander for their part in the successful attack upon the French position at Orthes on the River Adour. On 12th April Wellington captured Toulouse, and the war came to an end on 18th April after news had reached the French forces of the defeat of Napoleon in the " Battle of Nations " at Leipzig. For its services during the two campaigns in the Peninsula the Regiment was granted the battle honours " Rolica," " Vimiera," " Corunna," " Salamanca," " Pyrenees," " Nivelle," " Orthes," and " Peninsula " for its colours and appointments.

The 100 Days' War

1815 By the first Treaty of Paris in 1814 it was agreed that Napoleon should withdraw to the island of Elba, and that Louis XVII should be King of France. A Congress was

Digitized by Google

held at Vienna to settle the affairs of Europe, but whilst it was in session news came that Napoleon had escaped from Elba, landed in the South of France on 1st March, 1815, and was rapidly gathering around him an army. The European Powers promptly formed a league against him and arranged to despatch large armies to Belgium. On 10th May, 1815, Wellington's army arrived in Belgium and waited in that country for over a month, with a Prussian army under Blücher, in order to give the Austrians and Russians time to mobilise. Napoleon decided that he must attack the British and Prussians before the Austrian and Russian armies became effective, and accordingly took up the offensive on 16th June, 1815. He attacked the Prussians at Ligny and drove them back, but had no success against the British army, which held the French at bay at Quatre Bras until greatly reinforced. Finally, Wellington was able to advance and drive the French off the battlefield. In this action the 32nd Regiment held the Namur Road, where they were in the thick of the fighting. During the day a round shot hit the colours, carrying away the greater part of the silk of the Regimental Colour and causing many casualties. The total casualties for the 32nd Regiment during this action were 23 killed and 243 wounded.

Waterloo

1815 Wellington fell back to Waterloo on 17th June and strongly defended the advance posts of the Chateau of Hougoumont and the farm buildings of La Haye Sainte. He prepared to accept battle on the 18th, and Blücher promised to hurry to his assistance from Wavre, twelve miles to the east of Waterloo. The Battle of Waterloo began on the morning of 18th June and raged all day. The French attacked time and time again, but were driven back with severe losses. In the late afternoon the Prussians arrived and the allied armies advanced together and drove the French from the field. In this great battle the 32nd Regiment formed part of the left wing of Wellington's army and were under the command of Sir Thomas Picton. In this position it bore the brunt of severe fighting all day without wavering. When the French attacked Picton's Division their artillery made great gaps in the infantry squares, but the gallant men stood firm. Led by Sir Thomas Picton, the division counter-attacked the French with bayonets, driving them back in confusion. Unhappily, Sir Thomas Picton was killed in this action and was carried off

Digitized by Google

the field by two grenadiers of the 32nd Regiment—not, as is often shown in pictures, by two Highlanders. The 32nd Regiment was at one time during the battle in danger of losing its precious colours, but the French officer who grasped them was killed instantly by a Serjeant Switzer, one of the escort to the colours.

The casualties of the 32nd Regiment at Quatre Bras and Waterloo were greater than the casualties of any other regiment in the army, amounting to 685 of all ranks killed and wounded.

" Waterloo " was granted to the Regiment as a battle honour, and a great tribute paid to all ranks by Major-General James Kempt in the 5th Division Orders :—

" ARNEVILLE,

5th July, 1815.

" The 32nd Regiment will join the 6th Division this day according to General Orders of the 3rd inst.

" Major-General Sir James Kempt feels that he cannot part with this Regiment without again expressing the very high sense he entertains of its very distinguished conduct in the battles of 16th and 18th June. It was quite impossible for troops to behave more nobly or better than the 32nd Regiment did on these occasions, and begs Lieut.-Colonel Hicks, the officers and men will accept of his best thanks for their distinguished services while under his command."

The colours carried by the 32nd Regiment at Waterloo are now in Dunstaffnage Castle, Argyllshire. They were given to Lieut. Alexander Campbell in memory of his father, who was Colonel of the Regiment at that time.

As a result of the defeat at Waterloo, Napoleon was exiled to the island of St. Helena in the Atlantic, where he remained until his death, in 1821. The victory saw an end to the long struggle to prevent French domination of the Continent.

The Second Sikh War

1848 After Waterloo the 32nd Regiment returned to England, where it remained until 1817 and then proceeded on duty to garrison Corfu. After that it saw service at home in Ireland, in Canada and other parts until 1846, when it embarked for India. The Regiment had served for two years in India when the Second Sikh War broke out in 1848. The Sikhs were

Digitized by Google

a powerful and warlike tribe inhabiting the Punjaub. This country had fallen into anarchy, and frequent attacks were made on British territory. The First Sikh War, in 1845, had resulted in the defeat of the Sikhs and the establishment of a British protectorate over the Punjaub. The Second Sikh War broke out in 1848, and the 32nd Regiment took part in the campaign. The war was undertaken to punish the natives for the murder of two young Englishmen in Mooltan, and to put down a rising in that city under the governor, Moolraj. Only a few British troops were in the district, but, thanks to the efforts of a young subaltern, a small force was formed which drove the rebels back into Mooltan and held them there until the main British forces arrived. The 32nd Regiment was stationed at Ferozepore at the time and quickly obeyed an order to join General Whish's force outside Mooltan, which they reached after a trying journey which was accomplished partly by steamers, partly by native boats and partly by difficult marches in the blazing sun. The siege commenced at the end of August, 1848, and the city was forced to capitulate on 21st January, 1849, the Moolraj being captured. On that day a soldier of the 32nd Regiment, named McCabe, was granted an immediate officer's commission for placing the British flag on the walls of Mooltan under heavy fire.

1849 In the meantime the main Sikh army had withdrawn to Goojerat, where it was faced by a British army under Sir Hugh Gough. Gough waited until he received reinforcements from Mooltan and then, by masterly manœuvring, he forced the Sikhs to come out and fight him on ground of his choice. The Sikhs had sixty thousand men and Gough twenty-five thousand, but the British commander was well supplied with powerful artillery, including the eighteen-pounders which had been used at Mooltan. With this artillery Gough crushed the fire of the Sikh guns, and then the British infantry swept forward, driving the Sikhs in headlong flight before them. In this battle of 21st February, 1849, the 32nd Regiment sustained only five casualties, but managed to capture two Sikh standards. Afterwards the Regiment moved to Jullundar and later to Peshawar. For its services in this campaign the Regiment was granted the battle honours "Mooltan," "Goojerat" and "Punjaub" for the Regimental Colours. After the great victory at Goojerat the Punjaub was annexed and came under British rule.

Digitized by Google

The Crimean War

1854 Returning to the 46th Regiment, which was last mentioned in connection with the attack on Guadaloupe, in 1810. It is known that between 1814 and 1854 the Regiment served in Australia, India, England, Ireland and Gibraltar, the West Indies and Canada. In 1854 the Crimean War broke out, in which England and France took the side of Turkey against Russia. England was afraid of the growing power of Russia, afraid that she would conquer Turkey and control the Dardenelles, and so launch her fleets into the Mediterranean and become the predominant power in Europe. A quarrel between France and Russia over the custody of the Holy Places in Palestine made it necessary for the Sultan to ask for British help. Finally, fear of a massacre of Christians in Constantinople led to the British and French fleets breaking into the Black Sea and, thus encouraged, Turkey declared war on Russia. The advance party of the 46th Regiment reached the Crimea some time before the remainder of the Regiment and took part in the famous battles of Alma, Balaklava and Inkerman. In November, 1854, the whole Regiment was present at the siege of Sevastopol. Terrible hardships were endured by the troops taking part, as the winter was very severe and the men were not prepared for a long campaign.

The siege dragged on until September, 1855, when the city was evacuated by the Russians and the war brought to an end. The name " Sevastopol " was granted to the 46th Regiment as a battle honour, and the colours which were carried throughout the war, and which are now in Bodmin Parish Church, were presented to the Regiment by Lord Raglan on board the transport *Prince* on the arrival of the Headquarters of the Regiment in Balaklava harbour. The old colours went down with the ship when she was wrecked in Balaklava harbour on 19th November, 1854.

The Indian Mutiny

1857 During the nineteenth century English influence had spread until almost the whole of India was under English rule. Unnoticed by the rulers, however, causes of discontent were growing and led, in 1857, to the outbreak of mutiny among the native troops. Since the Crimean War, India had been dangerously denuded of British troops and the native forces had been growing discontented because of

Digitized by Google

offences committed in ignorance against their racial and religious sentiments. In January, 1858, a grievous mistake of the British Government applied a spark to the tinder when an improved musket, the Enfield rifle, was introduced to the Bengal Army. The ammunition for this rifle required greased cartridges, the end of which the soldier had to bite off before loading the gun. The Hindu thought that the new ammunition was greased with the fat of cows, which he considered sacred, and the Mohammedan was convinced that it was greased with the lard of swine, which were considered unclean. Following on a rumour that the Government meant to destroy their caste and faith, the soldiers quickly mutinied, and the rising which broke out in Meerut spread rapidly all over the country. British power was soon reduced to a few hard-pressed garrisons like Cawnpore and Lucknow. Europeans all over India were murdered by the Indians, and by the end of June, Lucknow, which was defended by Sir Henry Lawrence and the 32nd Regiment, was the only town in the province of Oudh left in British hands. A detachment of the 32nd, and the greater part of the married families of the Regiment, were at Cawnpore. They were besieged in this town with the rest of the European population, and continued to withstand the rebels until their supplies ran out, when they accepted the rebels' offer of a safe passage to Allahabad. On 27th June, 1857, the little garrison proceeded down the river to embark for Allahabad, but were nearly all massacred—men, women and children. The 32nd Regiment lost 3 officers, 82 other ranks, 47 women and 55 children by this treacherous act.

Revolted troops began to close in around Lucknow on 28th June, 1857, and approached the village of Chinhut, eight miles from the Residency. On 30th June Lawrence advanced to meet them with about seven hundred men, including three hundred of the 32nd Regiment, fifty European volunteers and eleven guns. The rebel leader, however, outmanœuvred Lawrence and drove him back to Lucknow with the loss of three guns captured and over three hundred and fifty officers and men, the casualties of the 32nd Regiment alone amounting to 115 killed and 39 wounded. The mutineers followed the retreating British back to Lucknow, and by sunset they were attacking the Residency.

The siege of Lucknow began earlier than had been expected and before the defences had been completed. On 1st July Lawrence decided to blow up Fort Machchi Bhawan and to

Digitized by Google

concentrate his forces on the defence of the Residency and its immediate surroundings. The area to be defended included Inne's Post, Gubbin's Battery, Cawnpore Battery, the Bailey Guard, Sikh's Square, Redan Battery and the Treasury. When Fort Machchi Bhawan was blown up a private of the 32nd Regiment was found to be missing. He had fallen asleep after drinking rather heavily and had been blown into the air by the force of the explosion. Falling unhurt to the ground, he continued to sleep, waking up next day to find the fort a ruin and his comrades gone. Greatly to the surprise and merriment of the Regiment, he arrived at the Residency on an ammunition cart drawn by two bullocks, the rebels being too intent on their looting to notice his arrival.

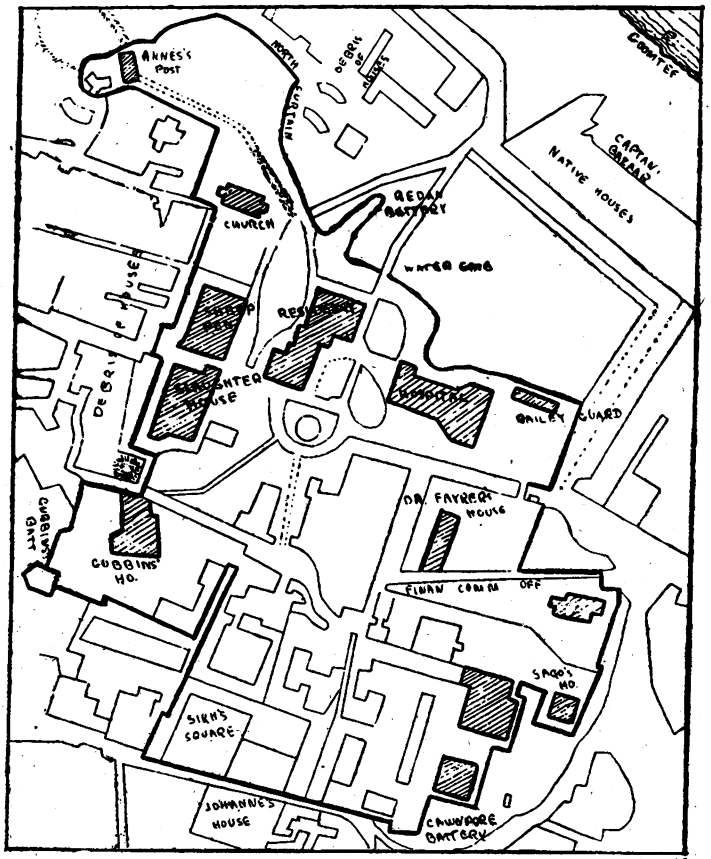
On 2nd July Sir Henry Lawrence was killed by a shell fragment, and the civil command devolved upon a Major Banks and the military command upon Colonel Sir John Inglis of the 32nd Regiment, who was known to be a resolute and fearless officer. When Major Banks was killed on 20th July, Colonel Inglis had to assume civil control as well as his military command. The siege went on through July, the besiegers devoting themselves to the digging of mines in which they showed some considerable skill. They were foiled, however, by the ingenious counter-mining of a select body of former Cornish miners from the 32nd Regiment under the chief engineer, Captain Fulton. During the month of July alone the 32nd Regiment lost 170 killed and wounded, but Colonel Inglis still appeared to be cheerful and indefatigable. It is stated that he never took his clothes off to sleep for over three months.

The garrison suffered severely from lack of medical supplies and doctors. An amputation meant that, in nearly every case, the man would die, but the story is told of an officer of the 32nd Regiment who recovered completely from the wound of a bullet which fractured his skull and lodged in his brain, from which it was extracted nine months later in England.

On 29th August a letter was received from General Havelock, who was known to be marching to the relief of Lucknow, containing the words, " Do not negotiate, but rather perish, sword in hand." This discouraged many of the natives, who deserted the garrison. By the end of the month the 550 men of the garrison had lost 125 killed or dead of wounds in addition to other casualties.

Digitized by Google

THE RESIDENCY, 1857.
Line of Defence shown thus —



It was not until 25th September, 1857, that Havelock's relief column fought its way into the Residency. The first that the defenders knew of its approach was the sound of a Royal salute of guns fired by the approaching troops when they were sixteen miles away, and the sound of the bagpipes as the force came nearer. Unfortunately the arrival of this column did

Digitized by Google

not mean that the garrison had been relieved, but only that it had been reinforced. Havelock's force had suffered so badly during its march that it had insufficient strength to free the defenders and was itself besieged. The new arrivals were a great help to the defenders, but their coming meant more mouths to feed, and food was getting very scarce. However, in spite of losses through smallpox, dysentery and cholera, the garrison held out until, on 17th November, 1857, the city was finally relieved by a strong force under Sir Colin Campbell. Campbell decided to evacuate the defences, and one night, under cover of darkness, the garrison marched away to safety. Colonel Inglis insisted on being the last man to leave.

The defence of Lucknow lasted for 140 days, the 32nd Regiment having stood firm throughout and for the first 87 days alone. The Union Jack over the Residency in Lucknow is the only one in the British Empire which is not lowered at sundown; it is kept flying day and night as a sign of the permanency of British rule and in recognition of the steadfastness of the garrison in the defence of Lucknow. The casualties suffered by the 32nd Regiment during the siege were 15 officers and 364 other ranks dead and 11 officers and 198 other ranks wounded.

Among the hundreds of messages received by the Regiment was one from Queen Victoria, from Buckingham Palace :—

" 14*th May*, 1858.

" Her Majesty, in consideration of the enduring gallantry displayed in the defence of Lucknow, has been pleased to direct that the 32nd Regiment be clothed, equipped and trained as a Light Infantry Regiment from the 26th February last.

" Her Majesty has also been pleased to command that the word ' Lucknow ' shall be borne upon the Regimental Colour in commemoration of the enduring fortitude displayed in the defence of the Residency for eighty-seven days."

The 32nd Regiment embarked for England at Calcutta on 28th March, 1859, and sailed under a Royal salute of twenty-one guns, fired from Fort William, by order of the Governor-General in Council. When the Regiment disembarked at Portsmouth in August of that year, the Queen graciously inspected the survivors, showing great interest in their ordeal. The following officers and men were awarded the Victoria Cross for gallantry during the siege :—

Digitized by Google

CORPORAL WILLIAM OXENHAM.

For distinguished gallantry on 30th June, 1857, when he extricated Mr. Capper, of the Bengal Civil Service, from the ruins of a veranda, while exposed to a heavy and close fire.

LIEUTENANT SAMUEL HILL LAWRENCE.

For distinguished gallantry in sorties on 7th July and 26th September, 1857.

PRIVATE WILLIAM DOWLING.

For distinguished gallantry in three sorties on 4th July, 9th July, and 27th September, 1857, in which he spiked enemy guns under a heavy fire.

CAPTAIN GEORGE HENRY BROWNE.

For conspicuous bravery in leading a sortie on 21st August, 1857.

The colours carried by the Regiment during the Sikh War and throughout the Indian Mutiny are now laid up in Bodmin Church in the Regimental Chapel.

One of the drums used by the 32nd Regiment in the Indian Mutiny can be seen at the Dover Museum. This drum, with other regimental stores, was abandoned when Fort Machchi Bhawan was blown up on the night of 1st July, 1857. It was found, however, by the 38th Regiment when the New Palace at Lucknow was recaptured in March, 1858, and returned to the 32nd Regiment. It was presented to the town of Dover by the Regiment because of the hospitality shown to the 32nd by the townsfolk of Dover on the return of the Regiment from India.

The anniversary of the relief of Lucknow is observed in the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. on 17th November.

The "Linked Battalion" System

1877 In 1877 the "Linked Battalion," or Territorial system, was introduced. This great reform, which is associated with the name of Edward Cardwell, Secretary of State for War in the Gladstone Government of 1868-1874, was brought about after the publication of a pamphlet called "The Battle of Dorking" by a Colonel Chesney, which shocked public opinion in this country into a serious apprehension regarding the backward state of the home defences.

Digitized by Google

For many years a great part of the Army had been stationed abroad (in 1868, only 47 out of 141 regiments were at home), and overseas service was not evenly balanced with service at home. This meant that the small part of the Army maintained in England was totally inadequate for home defence in the event of an invasion of our shores.

Cardwell planned to maintain a balance between the number of battalions at home and the number overseas. His plan linked together all the Regular regiments of the line in pairs, except the 1st to 25th of the line, to which second battalions had been added between 1857 and 1859. Each pair of regiments had a depot through which all recruits passed into the Home Service regiment, which was used to feed the regiment serving overseas. The common depot, therefore, provided the first real link between the regiments. In this way the 32nd and 46th Regiments became associated, and Bodmin Barracks was occupied by them as a depot in 1877. To draw the two still closer, the 32nd Regiment, which was then serving at home, sent a draft of 2 corporals, 1 bugler and 78 privates to the 46th Regiment in Bermuda. This was the first exchange of drafts between the linked regiments.

The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry

1881 In 1881 the linked regiments became battalions of the same regiment, the 32nd and 46th Regiments of Foot losing their separate identities and becoming the 1st and 2nd Battalions, respectively, The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry. To them were added the Royal Cornwall Rangers, The Duke of Cornwall's Own Regiment of Militia, which was first embodied in 1799 as the Royal Cornwall Militia, and the County Volunteer Corps, the whole forming one regiment known as The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry. The Royal Cornwall Rangers, The Duke of Cornwall's Own Regiment of Militia, became the 3rd Battalion D.C.L.I., and the 1st and 2nd Cornwall Rifle Volunteers became the 1st and 2nd Volunteer Battalions D.C.L.I. The battle honours of the 32nd and 46th Regiments were united and carried on the Regimental Colours of both battalions into which they were transformed.

Changes were also made at this time in the dress of the Army, and all English regiments, except Royal regiments, were ordered to wear white facings. This made no difference to the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I., which already wore them as the 32nd

Digitized by Google

(The Cornwall Light Infantry), but the 2nd Battalion had to change from the yellow facings worn by them as the 46th (South Devonshire) Regiment.

The abolition of old numbers and facings raised a violent storm in many parts of the country, especially where regiments with no common regimental interests or traditions were linked together. The 32nd and 46th appear to have settled down very quickly to their common existence, and nowadays each is a source of great pride to the other despite healthy battalion rivalry.

The Egyptian War

1882 During the period between the end of the Crimean War in 1855 and 1882 the 2nd Battalion (46th) served in various parts of the world, including Greece, India, Ireland and England. The Battalion was stationed at Gibraltar when the war broke out between this country and Egypt in 1882. British intervention in Egypt came as the result of the purchase of the Khedive Ismail's shares in the Suez Canal in 1875. The Canal had been opened in 1869 under French control, the work of building having been carried out by the great French engineer De Lesseps, assisted by forced labour provided by the Khedive. The French government had provided the money for this venture and had given a block of 176,602 shares to the Khedive in recognition of his co-operation, and these shares he placed on the market in 1875 when, as the result of extravagance, the Egyptian government found itself almost bankrupt. The British Prime Minister, Disraeli, immediately saw that the Canal, as the shortest route to India, was of great importance to England, and, without waiting for the consent of Parliament, he purchased the shares outright for £4,000,000.

In 1882 Arabi Pasha led the Egyptian Army in an attempt to drive out the Europeans from Egypt. The French, afraid of a German invasion of their homeland, dared not risk sending an army to Egypt, and the British were left to shoulder the burden alone. Trouble arose in Alexandria, where one hundred and fifty Europeans were murdered on 11th June, 1882, and the British fleet bombarded the port. At the same time troops, including the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I., were landed to capture the city. Later the Battalion took part in engagements at Ranleh, Tel-el-Mahuts, El-Magfur and Massowah, and formed part of the force sent forward by the British commander, Sir Garnet Wolseley, to protect the lock and water

Digitized by Google

supply at Kassassin. In the severe fighting at this place the Battalion lost 4 officers and 40 other ranks.

After this the 2nd Battalion took part in the great attack on Tel-el-Kebir which ended in the complete rout of the enemy. Arabi Pasha had taken up strong positions at this place, which had been selected so as to give a perfect field of fire. Wolseley decided that it would be madness to attempt to capture such a strong position by day, so he planned a large-scale, long-distance attack on the city by night. The force set out at midnight on 13th September, 1882, and after a brilliant night march arrived at the Egyptian position in the early morning, surprising and routing the entire army at the cost of only four hundred casualties. The Egyptian army was so completely defeated that it made no attempt at a further stand, and by 14th September Wolseley's forces were in Cairo, where they accepted the surrender of ten thousand Egyptian soldiers. As a result of this war England found herself in control of Egypt. The battle honour " Egypt, 1882 " was given to the Regiment for its colours.

The Sudan Campaign

1883 All was now quiet in Egypt, but in 1883 a revolt broke out in the Soudan, an outlying possession of Egypt. This was led by a religious fanatic called the Mahdi, who believed that he had Divine authority to drive out the Europeans. The Mohammedans expect a Mahdi to appear during the last few days before the end of the world, and, thinking that this was the real Mahdi, they followed him blindly. In November, 1883, a force sent out under Hicks Pasha, an ex-officer of the Indian Army, consisting of a handful of English officers and some eight thousand Egyptian soldiers, was cut to pieces and every man massacred. The British Government then sent out a small force under General Gordon to withdraw the scattered garrisons from the Soudan. Gordon, unable to induce the demoralised Egyptians to take the field, was himself besieged in Khartoum by the fanatical troops of the Mahdi. An expedition for the relief of Khartoum was dispatched in 1884 under the command of Lord Wolseley. This force, which included the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I., fought its way up the Nile by camel and boat. When at last it reached Khartoum it was found that Gordon and his garrison had been massacred on 26th January, 1885. The British Government then decided to abandon the expedition because it thought

Digitized by Google

the conquest of the Soudan not worth the expenditure of blood and treasure. British and Egyptian armies under Kitchener were able to conquer the Soudan in 1898.

For its part in the campaign the 2nd Battalion was given the battle honour " Nile, 1884-85 " for the Regimental Colours.

The First Meeting between the Battalions

1886 In 1886 the 2nd Battalion was sent home to England. On its way through the Mediterranean it was taken into Malta, where the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. was stationed. This meeting was historic, for it was the first occasion on which the linked battalions had met.

Burma

1891 Between August, 1859 (the month in which it returned to England from services in the Indian Mutiny) and 1890 the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. (the 32nd) served in Ireland, South Africa, the Mediterranean and Mauritius. In 1890 the Battalion was sent to Burma where, in 1891, it took part in the Wunthoo Expedition, the purpose of which was to put down the revolt of a tribe known as the Tsawbaws. Casualties during this expedition were very light, amounting to only 1 officer, 1 serjeant and 5 men. It was on this expedition that the Battalion captured a Burmese bell from the temple in Wunthoo. Later it was presented to the Mayor and Corporation of Bodmin by the Regiment, and can now be seen in the Bodmin Free Library.

The Tirah Campaign

1897 In 1893 the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. went to India, and in 1897 took part in a punitive expedition against the Afridis and Orakzais on the North-West Frontier of India. The expedition was organised to punish the tribesmen for their attacks upon British frontier posts guarding the Khaibar Pass, and was the largest expedition of this type ever employed. The scene of the trouble was the Tirah country on the Peshawar—Kohat border, and the British force entered territory never before traversed by white men. They found that the tribesmen were all well armed with long-range, breech-loading rifles—Sniders, effective up to 900 yards, Martini-Henrys and Lee-Enfields, effective up to more than 1,500 yards—which they used with devastating effect against

Digitized by Google

our long straggling columns on the mountain paths. The 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. formed part of the Reserve Brigade at Rawal Pindi at the commencement of hostilities, but later took part in the expedition up the Bara valley with the 3rd Brigade. Despite difficulties, the most recalcitrant of the tribesmen were brought to submission before the British withdrew in April, 1898.

Among the officers of the 1st Battalion during this campaign was a young subaltern named H. A. Carter. He was commissioned in the D.C.L.I. in May, 1897, and served with the Regiment until 1899, when he was transferred to the Indian Army. He proceeded to Somaliland with the King's African Rifles three years later, and on 19th December, 1903, he was awarded the Victoria Cross for gallantly rescuing a wounded Sikh soldier from the Dervishes.

The South African War

1899 In 1899 the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. saw service in South Africa, where war had broken out between the Dutch and English settlers. Difficulty had been caused by the growth of a large mixed population in the Transvaal who were developing the mineral resources of the country. The Transvaal Government refused to give the franchise to these aliens, although they furnished most of the wealth on which the republic flourished, because they outnumbered the Boer population. The situation became more and more serious and eventually the British Government took steps to send reinforcements to the weak British garrisons who were menaced by the offensive and defensive alliance arranged between the Transvaal Boers and the Orange Free State in 1897.

The quarrel was so bitter that war seemed almost inevitable, and it was hastened when the South African Republic presented an ultimatum to the British Government on 9th October, 1899, demanding the withdrawal of British troops on the borders of Natal and the turning back of all reinforcements. Failing agreement, war was to be declared within two days. The British Government's answer to this ultimatum was a direct refusal, and Britain found herself at war with the Orange Free State and Transvaal. The 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. arrived in South Africa late in 1899, at a time when things were not going

Digitized by Google

at all well. The Boers had evolved a system of warfare particularly suited to South African conditions, and the British seemed unable to cope with it. On the morning of the New Year in 1900 the Battalion took part in a successful attack on a Dutch laager near Douglas, killing 14 and taking 38 prisoners. This force pushed on to Douglas, which the Boers had evacuated, and brought back in safety to the British headquarters a number of loyalist refugees. Later the Battalion took part in the fighting pursuit of the Boer army under Cronje, which terminated in the battle of Paardeberg.

Paardeberg—The Famous Charge of the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry

1900 In the battle of Paardeberg, on 18th February, 1900, the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. won for itself a lasting name. The Boers had taken up a strong position along three miles of the river bank, well concealed by a screen of trees and brushwood, the main river facing north and south, and the dips in the ground facing east and west, at right-angles to the river. All this made close attack a difficult and dangerous operation, because, in order to get at them, it was necessary to advance across some four hundred yards of bare and open ground, swept by rifle fire. Several unsuccessful attempts were made at crossing this plain before the famous charge was made by Smith-Dorrien's Brigade. The story is given in Conan Doyle's history: " . . . On the northern bank Smith-Dorrien's Brigade, especially the Canadian Regiment, distinguished themselves by the magnificent tenacity with which they persevered in their attack. The ' Cornwalls,' of the same brigade, swept up almost to the river bank in a charge which was the admiration of all who saw it. If the miners of Johannesburg had given the impression that the Cornishman is not a fighter, the record of the County Regiment in the war has forever exploded the calumny. Men who were not fighters could not have found a place in Smith-Dorrien's Brigade or in the charge of Paardeberg." In this action the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. lost its commanding officer, Colonel Aldworth, who fell leading the charge, and 55 other officers and men. Cronje and four thousand Boers were captured at Paardeberg. The battle honour " Paardeberg " was granted to the Regiment, and Paardeberg Day is celebrated in the 2nd Battalion on 18th February each year.

Digitized by Google

1900 The 2nd Battalion took part in the action at Poplar Grove on 7th March, 1900. De Wet, the Boer leader, had fixed Poplar Grove farm as a rallying point for his forces, and from here he decided to dispute the British advance on the Free State capital, Bloemfontein. Lord Roberts advanced on the farm with cavalry and infantry, but the Boers, ignoring the protests of Kruger and Steyn, their presidents, scampered off in all directions. The British captured one gun but no prisoners. On 9th March the British army, including the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I., advanced and captured Driefontein. Here the Boers made a great stand, in marked contrast to their flight from Poplar Grove, and the British had to throw every man into the fighting line before the enemy were driven from their hill position. On 13th March Lord Roberts entered Bloemfontein.

The Battalion took part in actions at Thabanachu, Doornkop and Johannesburg, and formed part of Lord Roberts' army which marched into Pretoria on 4th June, 1900. The capture of Pretoria ended all large-scale fighting, but the Boers broke up into small guerilla bands and carried on the fight for a further year and a half. The 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. was employed all this time in mopping up these guerillas, and a Mounted Infantry company of the Battalion took its full share in the struggle until the final defeat of the Boers in May, 1902.

The total casualties of the 2nd Battalion during the South African War amounted to 13 officers and 143 other ranks. "South Africa, 1899-1902" was granted to the Regiment as a battle honour. The Boer Republics became subject to the British Crown as the Transvaal and the Orange River Colonies, but within a few years of the end of the war they became members of the Union of South Africa.

Somaliland

1904 Lieutenant C. L. Smith, of the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I., was awarded the Victoria Cross for a most gallant attempt to save the lives of Lieutenant J. R. Welland, R.A.M.C., and a hospital assistant, who were surrounded by the enemy. This incident occurred during operations in Somaliland on 10th January, 1904.

The Haldane Reforms

1907 The reorganisation of the Army in 1877 and 1881 was carried a stage further in 1907 when, as part of the Haldane Reforms, the heterogeneous mass of Yeomanry and

Digitized by Google

Volunteers were welded together into one force, the Territorial Army. In this manner the 1st and 2nd Volunteer Battalions D.C.L.I. became the 4th and 5th Battalions D.C.L.I.

The First World War, 1914-1918

As we have seen, the Regiment which we now know as The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry was originally raised in 1702 to take part in a war to prevent France from becoming too powerful in Europe. Indeed, during the period 1688 to 1815 England and France were opposed to each other in no fewer than seven great wars—the war of the Grand Alliance, 1689-1697; the war of the Spanish Succession, 1702-1713 (for service in which the Regiment was born); the war of the Austrian Succession, 1740-1748; the Seven Years War, 1756-1763; the second part of the War of American Independence, 1778-1783; the Revolutionary Wars,1793-1802; the Napoleonic Wars, 1803-1815; and in the last six of these wars the D.C.L.I. played its part. From 1870 onwards the power which threatened to dominate Europe was the new Imperial Germany, and in 1914 England and France found themselves allied in an effort to prevent the expansion of a Power which threatened them both.

The Archduke Francis Ferdinand, the heir apparent to the Austro-Hungarian throne, was assassinated at Serajevo on 26th June, 1914. Austria-Hungary sent an ultimatum to Serbia, considered the reply unsatisfactory, and declared war, with the support of Germany as an ally, on 28th, July, 1914.

Precautionary mobilization by France in support of her ally, Russia, who was backing the Serbs, was taken to be a hostile act by the German government, which demanded a passage for German troops through Belgium in order to get at France. The Belgian government refused this demand, and by the evening of 4th August, 1914, German troops had invaded Belgium and Great Britain declared war on Germany in accordance with her treaty obligations.

At the outbreak of war the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry had five battalions—1st and 2nd (Regular Army), 3rd (Royal Cornwall Rangers, The Duke of Cornwall's Own Regiment of Militia), and 4th and 5th (Territorial Army). The 1st Battalion was stationed at Curragh in Ireland and received orders to mobilize on 4th August, 1914. By 7th August the Battalion had been completed to war strength by the arrival of

Digitized by Google

reservists from the Depot at Bodmin, the entry in the Battalion Diary being as follows :—

" *7th August.*—By the third day (7th) the Battalion was fully mobilized, all the new arrivals and stores necessary to take the field being present. The process of mobilization had proceeded without a hitch."

On 13th August the Battalion entrained at Curragh for Dublin, where it embarked on the ss. *Lanfranc* for France. On the afternoon of the 14th August the vessel passed close in under the Land's End, giving the County Regiment a last glimpse of the county from which it derived its title. The D.C.L.I. disembarked at Havre on 15th August, and during the train journey through Amiens, Ham, St. Quentin, Bohain to Le Cateau the men had a most enthusiastic welcome from the French population.

On 21st August the Battalion marched from Landrecies into Belgium, where it took up its position at Mons Conde, and at 6 a.m. on 23rd August the first engagement between the D.C.L.I. and the Germans took place. A section of No. 6 Platoon occupied a trench in front of which, at a bend in the road, a sentry post had been established. This post was manned by three privates, and during their tour of duty they opened fire on a patrol of German Dragoon officers, one of whom was killed. These were the first shots fired by the D.C.L.I. in the Great War.

At about 4.45 p.m. on the same day the Battalion was attacked by a large force of cavalry and infantry, but the attack was beaten off with heavy losses. During the day the whole length of the French line had been attacked, and by evening a general retreat along their front made it necessary for the British to withdraw. During this retreat to the Marne the Battalion took part in the Battle of Le Cateau on 26th August, during which they lent valuable assistance to the right of II Corps. The losses of the D.C.L.I. during this battle were considerable, but fortunately more than half of the men reported missing rejoined the Battalion later.

The retreat from Mons was highly creditable to the British Army, as it had fallen back from its former positions in the face of a vastly superior force, which it had at last fought to a standstill. The D.C.L.I. marched two hundred and forty miles in fourteen days, despite the fact that sixty per cent. of the men were reservists quite unused to route-marching. On 5th September the retreat stopped and the D.C.L.I. was

Digitized by Google

one of the units of the British Army ordered to " about turn " and drive the Germans back again. The advance was successful, and the German army was forced to retire to a line along the Aisne. The D.C.L.I. took a very active part in the battle of the Aisne on 13th-15th September, 1914, and won fame for their attack on the village of Missy.

During the early part of October, 1914, the British Expeditionary Force was transferred from the Aisne to Flanders, and throughout the winter of 1914-15 the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. served almost continuously in the front line. On 20th November, 1914, Bandsman Thomas Edward Rendle, of the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I., was awarded the Victoria Cross for conspicuous bravery near Wulvergham in attending to the wounded and in rescuing men from blown-in trenches under heavy fire. This gallant stretcher-bearer crawled across open ground in full view of the enemy with a badly wounded officer on his back.

1915 On 7th January, 1915, when the 1st Battalion was resting in Bailleul, the 2nd Battalion marched through the little town on their way to the front line. The entry in the Battalion Diary of the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. was as follows :—

" On 7th January we were informed that the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. ,which formed part of the 82nd Brigade, 27th Division, lately out from England and home from Hong Kong, would pass through Bailleul on its way forward for its first experience of duty in the trenches. We therefore marched down and took up position at the side of the road along which the 2nd Battalion was to pass. At about 10 a.m. they marched into Bailleul, and a scene of the greatest enthusiasm marked what is believed to have been the first meeting ever effected between the 1st and 2nd Battalions."*

1916 In July, 1916, the 1st Battalion took part in the great battles of the Somme, attacking at Delville Wood and Guillemont and holding the trenches at Morval and Fresnoy against fierce attzcks.

1917 In April, 1917, it fought in the battle of Arras, in which it relieved the Canadians and advanced beyond the famous Vimy Ridge. Later in the same month the Battalion

* Actually it was the second meeting, as the battalions had met at Malta in 1882.

Digitized by Google

was mentioned in despatches for its part in another action: "In the minor operations south-west of Lens, Cornish troops established themselves on the railway loop east of Cite des Petits Bois and succeeded in maintaining their position in spite of numerous counter-attacks."

The 1st Battalion were active again in the battles of the Ypres Salient, in which they exhibited "magnificent dash in attack and endurance in defence." In many of these attacks the Cornwalls fought in company with the 1st Devons, and both regiments suffered heavy losses. For example, in the attack on Polderhoek Chateau, in which the Devons supported the Cornwalls, the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. lost 11 officers and 123 other ranks killed, wounded or missing.

The 1st Battalion in Italy

1917 On 10th December, 1917, the Battalion had orders to entrain for Italy and, after a most interesting journey through Marseilles, Cannes, Monte Carlo and Mentone, it crossed the Italian frontier on 16th December. The 5th Division, in which the Battalion was serving, was placed in reserve and the Battalion remained in a place called Busiago until 27th January, 1918, when it moved into the battle line. After a very short period of service in Italy, however, the 5th Division was sent back to France, where the Allied High Command was in urgent need of reinforcements because of the alarming progress of the Germans on the Somme. The D.C.L.I. left Italy by train on 3rd April, arriving in France on 7th April, 1918.

The Battalion took up a position east of the Foret de Nieppe on 12th April, and on the following day the 5th Division was attacked by the enemy. All attacks against the section held by the 1st Battalion were broken up by machine-gun fire and not a yard of its ground was yielded. The divisional commander praised the Battalion for its steadiness and gallantry during this critical action. If the enemy had broken through and taken the Channel ports the position of the British Army would have been a most serious one.

Throughout the summer and autumn of 1918 the 1st Battalion saw action almost continuously, taking part in the breaking of the German Hindenburg Line and in the advance to Mons, fighting on until victory on 11th November, 1918.

Digitized by Google

The 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. in the War of 1914-1918

1914 When the war broke out in 1914 the 2nd Battalion was stationed at Hong Kong, and for the first few weeks after mobilization the bulk of the Battalion was employed in guard duties over important military points in the island.

Soon after mobilization orders had been received the Battalion was asked to provide a company of volunteers who would serve as marines on board H.M.S. *Triumph*, in order that she might proceed with the remainder of the fleet to round up German ships. Every officer, non-commissioned officer and man in the Battalion volunteered, and a company consisting of 2 officers and 106 other ranks went aboard the *Triumph* on 4th August. They continued to serve on the warship until 26th August, when they were recalled to Hong Kong to join the Battalion which had been ordered to an "unknown destination." Thus history repeated itself, for in 1702 the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. was raised as Fox's Marines, and after two hundred years a battalion of the same Regiment was called on to serve as marines again.

In November, 1914, the 2nd Battalion returned to England, and in December of the same year landed in France.

1915 In April, 1915, the Battalion lost all its officers except one and all its men except ninety-five, during the German's first gas attack near Ypres. After receiving reinforcements, the 2nd Battalion served in the trenches during the summer and autumn of 1915 until 27th October, when its division was relieved. Orders had been received for the division, including the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I., to join the Mediterranean Expeditionary Force, and on 26th November the Battalion embarked at Marseilles on H.M.T. *Transylvania*, in which it sailed to Salonika. There the Battalion spent many weary months on the Struma front and on several occasions came in contact with the 8th Battalion D.C.L.I., which was serving on the same front.

1918 On the morning of 14th September, 1918, both the 2nd and 8th Battalions D.C.L.I. took part in the attack upon the Bulgar line from Doiran to Monastir, and on the succeeding days they were in action on the same front. The attack continued until the enemy had been driven back into Bulgaria, and on 30th September, 1918, the enemy asked for an armistice.

Digitized by Google

After this the 2nd Battalion returned to Salonika, thence to Batoum and Tiflis, and returned to England in 1919.

Space does not permit even a short account of the war service of the non-Regular battalions, but the following table shows that many of them made important contributions to the regimental and to the national war effort.

1st Battalion (32nd)	France and Flanders ...	1914-1917
	Italy	1917-1918
	France and Flanders ...	1918-1919
2nd Battalion (46th)	France and Flanders ...	1914-1915
	Macedonia	1915-1919
1/4th Battalion	India	1914-1916
	Southern Arabia ...	1916-1917
	Egypt and Palestine ...	1917-1919
1/5th Battalion	France and Flanders ...	1916-1919
6th Battalion	France and Flanders ...	1915-1918
7th Battalion	France and Flanders ...	1915-1919
8th Battalion	France and Flanders ...	1915
	Macedonia	1915-1919
10th Battalion	France and Flanders ...	1916-1919

Reserve and Training Battalions.

3rd Battalion	Acted as "feeding" Battalion for battalions overseas
2/4th Battalion	Carried out garrison duties in India.
4th (Reserve) Battalion ...	Did not serve overseas.
3/4th Battalion	
2/5th Battalion	
9th (Res.) Service Battalion ...	
11th (Res.) Service Battalion	

The 12th (Labour) Battalion was formed on 23rd March, 1916, and proceeded to France in May of that year. It ceased to be a battalion in May, 1917, when it was formed into the 156th and 157th Labour Companies of the Labour Corps.

The 1st and 2nd Volunteer Battalions D.C.L.I. were recruited late in the war for the purposes of Home defence. In the absence of the Territorial Force abroad it had become necessary to provide for the safeguarding of the shores of England against possible invasion, and the devoted service of these Volunteer Battalions was recognised by the King, who, in thanking them for their services, said: "I cannot forget the self-sacrifice and patriotism which inspired so many of my subjects who, from reasons of health and age, were unable to serve abroad, to come forward and train themselves for any eventuality in the hour or the country's need."

The record of the Regiment during this world struggle is a proud one. The eight active battalions won fifty-seven honours,

Digitized by Google

of which the ten most representative have been placed on the King's Colour. Very many of the officers and men of the Regiment fought and suffered and died for love of England and are commemorated on the beautiful memorial raised by the Regiment to the 255 officers and 4,027 other ranks who gave their lives.

Reforming the 1st Battalion

1918 After the armistice in November, 1918, the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. remained in the Le Quesnoy area until December, when it moved to Belgium. In February, 1919, demobilization of the 5th Division began, and on 20th April, 1919, the cadre of the D.C.L.I. embarked at Antwerp for England.

1919 The majority of non-commissioned officers and men who had not yet completed their engagement were sent to join the 2nd Battalion, which was being brought up to strength for service in India. The remainder were sent to join the 3rd Battalion, which was stationed at Ballyshannon, Ireland. In August, 1919, the 3rd Battalion was reduced to its peace establishment and transferred to Bodmin, but the bulk of the non-commissioned officers and men remained in Ireland to reform the 1st Battalion.

1920 The 1st Battalion was sent to Ballykinlar Camp in August, 1920, and remained there for duty in connection with the Irish rebellion until February, 1922. While Britain was preoccupied with the World War the Sinn Fein extremists has been stirring up their country against the British. In 1919 these extremists openly declared Ireland to be a republic and raised the Irish Republican Army. Trouble continued in Ireland until 1921, when a large section of the Republican Party realised that Southern Ireland was dissolving into anarchy and agreed to a truce. On 6th December, 1921, a treaty was signed which gave dominion status to the twenty-six southern counties under the title of the Irish Free State, while the six northern counties achieved some measure of self-government with the United Kingdom. The British Government agreed to move all British garrisons from Ireland.

1922 In February, 1922, the Battalion moved to Aldershot and thence to India. There it was quartered at Chakrata, Meerut and Dhera Dhun until December, 1923, when it

Digitized by Google

transferred to Lucknow. In November, 1927, it moved to Lebong and Barrackpore, half the Battalion being at each place, the Headquarters at Lebong.

1930 The Battalion remained at Lebong until 1930, when it moved to Barelly. In 1934 it moved to Razmak on the North-West Frontier, and in 1935 to Dinapore, Andaman Islands and Muzzafapore. Its final move was to Lahore, where it remained from 1938 until the outbreak of war in 1939.

Reforming the 2nd Battalion

1919 Returning to England from the Caucasus in 1919, the 2nd Battalion was made up to strength and re-equipped for service in India. The Battalion sailed from Tilbury Docks in September, 1919, and on arrival in India was stationed in Calcutta with detachments at Lebong, Dinapore, Dum Dum and Barrackpore.

1920 In May, 1920, the British Government accepted the mandate over Iraq (Mesopotamia), and the prospect of direct British rule led to a revolt of the Arab tribes against Britain. The revolt grew to serious proportions, and the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. was amongst those units sent to help put down the rebels. The Battalion arrived in Iraq in September, 1920, and took an active part in operations near Nasiriyeh, Kidher, Shattra and Sug. By about January, 1921, he tribesmen were decisively beaten and a British controlled government set up.

1921 In February, 1921, the Battalion left Iraq for Malta, where it was intended that the next two years should be spent. It arrived at Malta on 23rd March, 1921, and early in the morning of 5th April received orders to proceed to England immediately for duty in connection with the great strike which was then in progress. The Battalion disembarked at Devonport on 14th April and was quartered at Raglan Barracks, where it was joined by reservists from the Depot at Bodmin. On 2nd July it left Devonport for Ireland and was quartered in Dublin during the Irish trouble. The 1st and 2nd Battalions met there when the 1st Battalion passed through the city *en route* for India. This was the third meeting between the two battalions.

When the Irish Rebellion came to an end in February, 1922, the 2nd Battalion handed over Dublin Castle to the Irish Free

Digitized by Google

State military authorities. The last Union Jack to fly over the castle was hauled down by Captain Codyre of the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I., and is now kept in the 2nd Battalion's Officers' Mess.

On leaving Ireland the Battalion proceeded to Tidworth, where it refitted for service on the Rhine. Shortly after joining the Army of Occupation at Cologne, the Battalion Headquarters and three companies moved to Silesia to prevent disturbances during the taking of the plebiscite to determine whether or not Silesia was to remain under German rule. The remaining company stayed in Cologne.

1924 In 1924 the 2nd Battalion D.C.L.I. went to the Channel Islands on a tour of duty which lasted until 1927. During its stay in the Channel Islands, Headquarters and two companies were stationed at Guernsey and two companies at Alderney.

1927 The Battalion returned from the Channel Islands and joined the 5th Infantry Brigade, 2nd Division, at Aldershot. Later the Battalion was stationed for a period at Gibraltar, after which it returned to England and remained there until the outbreak of war in 1939.

The Second World War

1939 At eleven o'clock on 3rd September, 1939, Britain declared war on Germany for the second time within about twenty-five years. The events leading up to this declaration of war can be briefly recapitulated. Hitler established Nazi rule in Germany in 1933, and by 1934 had withdrawn the German representatives from the League of Nations. On 16th March, 1935, he announced to the world that he proposed to ignore the disarmament clause of the Versailles Treaty and to reintroduce conscription, and on 7th March, 1936, the German Army marched into the Rhineland, violating both the Versailles Treaty and the Pact of Locarno.

Hitler was by now certain that the nations associated in the League would not oppose him as a collective body, and he determined to carry out his plan of attacking his neighbours one by one. On the 12th March, 1938, German troops marched in and annexed Austria, and on 15th March, 1939, invaded and overran Czechoslovakia. Hitler next turned on Poland and demanded the return to Germany of the Polish Corridor and the port and city of Danzig, which had been under League control. As a result of this demand hurried consultations took place between British and Polish government repre-

Digitized by Google

sentatives, the French government being kept fully informed of their development, and on 31st March the Prime Minister told the House of Commons of the progress of these talks. In the meanwhile, " in the event of any action which clearly threatened Polish independence, and which the Polish government accordingly considered it vital to resist with their national forces, His Majesty's government would feel themselves bound at once to lend the Polish government all support in their power." On 28th April, Hitler denounced the German-Polish Non-Aggression Pact of 1934 and the Anglo-German Naval Agreement of 1935 on the ground of the hostility now shown to Germany by these Powers.

On 23rd August, 1939, came the unpleasant news that the German foreign minister had signed a non-aggression pact with Russia and on 1st September, with the neutrality of Russia assured, the Germans invaded Poland without a declaration of war. The British Government immediately warned the Germans that, unless the invading troops were withdrawn from Poland, Britain would fulfil her obligations. No reply having been received, the demand was repeated on the morning of 3rd September in the form of an ultimatum, and on the same day Britain and Germany were at war. Britain declared war, as she had so often done in the past, to maintain on the Continent of Europe a society of nations free from the domination of a single overwhelming power.

The D.C.L.I. at War

Note.—In the account of the present war it has been possible to mention only those actions which have already been made public in the Press or in other similar publications. The full account of the Regiment's activities will not be known until the War History has been written.

Note.—After the war, when the War Diaries and other official documents are available, it will be possible to write a very full and detailed account of the Regiment's great share in the struggle.

1939 The 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. was stationed in India when war broke out in September, 1939, and it remained in that country until 1941, when it moved to Libya by way of Iraq and immediately took its place in the fighting line.

It will be remembered that the 8th Army attacked the Germans on 18th November, 1941, and, after heavy fighting, had advanced to Benghazi by the end of the year. Rommel, however, managed to get away to El Agheila, where he pre-

Digitized by Google

pared for a counter-stroke. On 23rd January, 1942, he struck his blow which reached great intensity by the end of May and the beginning of June in the gallant but unavailing defence of Bir Hakim by the French, and in the battle of " the Cauldron." The story of the action in which the D.C.L.I. were involved can best be told by quoting from the official pamphlet, " The Tiger Kills." The chapter on " The Knightsbridge Cauldron " relates : " The West Yorkshire Regiment had in the meantime been fighting a desperate action. After the British tanks had been withdrawn the Battalion was surrounded by a ring of armour at a range of 2,000 yards . . .

" The position of the Yorkshiremen appeared desperate. Yet the chance came and the Battalion got back. The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry was given the task of blocking lanes through the minefields which came out near Bir el Harmat. The Battalion arrived piecemeal during the afternoon of 5th June, company by company, with newly issued anti-tank guns. As the Cornishmen arrived at Bir el Harmat they were attacked by strong formations from the south and destroyed in detail after a hopeless and gallant resistance. It was a sad end to a very fine Battalion which was only then completing its long march from Baghdad."

After a heavy defeat of its armour at Knightsbridge on 13th June the British army had to withdraw. Tobruk fell on 21st June, 1942, and the retreat to El Alamein followed. On this position General Auchinleck held the Germans almost in sight of Cairo.

Conversion of the 6th Battalion

1942 As a result of the annihilation of the 1st Battalion, it was decided to convert the 6th Battalion, which had been raised during the war, into the 1st Battalion. This conversion took place at an historic ceremony held at Helston, Cornwall, on 9th December, 1942, at which the Acting Colonel of the Regiment, Lieut.-General A. N. Floyer-Acland, C.B., D.S.O., M.C., gave the following inspiring address :—

" In the absence on duty abroad of General Sir Walter Venning, I have come to-day, acting in his place as Colonel of the Regiment, to take part with you in a ceremony which will be historic in the annals of our Regiment. It is, in fact, no less an occasion than the passing of the title, the traditions, the honour and the enduring spirit of one body of men to the safe keeping of another.

Digitized by Google

" You see before you, under the command of a very gallant Cornishman, Major Peter-Hoblyn, all that now remains to us of the officers and men of our 1st Battalion, a small but very honourable body—honourable and vital, because it brings in it the living and undying spirit of that magnificent Battalion, to be vested in you to-day.

" Nearly two centuries and a half ago that Battalion first came into existence and immediately, in the distinguished part that it played in the capture and defence of Gibraltar, it began to write its history and to build up its great traditions. Since then, in many parts of the world, in peace and in war—at Dettingen, in the Peninsula, at Waterloo, through the Indian Mutiny, when, for its dauntless defence of Lucknow, it won the special honour of the title of Light Infantry, in Egypt and in France and Italy during the last great war—through all these, and in countless other arduous activities, that Battalion had been adding, page by page, to its glorious story, living up to its great traditions and bringing fresh lustre to them. To the very end it kept its high renown, and I had it directly from the Commander-in-Chief in India, just before the Battalion left that country to join the field army, that, in his opinion, he had under his command no finer body of men, nor one in which he would more readily place his confidence in battle.

" Then, after many months of strenuous preparation, under conditions of very great discomfort and hardship in the dust and heat and mud and bitter cold of Iraq, the opportunity to which every man had been so keenly looking forward came suddenly—and with it, almost immediately, disaster; disaster which it should be the burning ambition of each one of you to avenge.

" I cannot give you now the full details of the fight in which they met their gallant end.* They will not be known until the full story of the campaign in Libya is written. But of this you may be quite certain: that grand Battalion, finding itself in desperate straits, alone, with nothing but its own indomitable spirit to support it, fought on, and went down fighting only when engulfed by the overwhelming storm of German armour. No body of men, situated as they were, could have done more than they did in that day of their final struggle against impossible odds. Of that I am certain. I know that we may be justly proud of them in the manner of their passing. As a Battalion

* Official account given on page 44.

Digitized by Google

they are lost to us, but their happy, dauntless spirit lives on; and now, when this set of their old colours, symbolic of their honourable service and traditions, moves into your ranks and comes to rest in the hearts of your Battalion, that spirit, and the title of the 1st Battalion The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry will pass to you, to be in your faithful and fearless keeping."

At this point of the ceremony the colours of the old 1st Battalion were handed over to the 6th Battalion, and the General went on to address them as the 1st Battalion :—

"A great trust has now been placed in you. I have no fear that you will be in any way unworthy of it. Let each of you now determine that, come what may, you will never fail it. Keep that determination always before you, and see that it is passed on to those who come to join you in the future. Wherever your duty calls you, whether it is with the Regiment or elsewhere, let the great traditions to which you have to-day succeeded serve as a constant inspiration to you. There will come times when distress and fear and great discomfort will be your lot. In such times you will need something even more enduring than your own great courage to sustain you. It will be then that the grand spirit of traditions that you have now inherited will bring you that added strength. Make proper use of them and they will serve you well, but—let me put you on your guard—to rest complaisantly upon the honours handed down to you by others would breed only a false conceit and idleness, and with them would come, inevitably, failure. So let it be your constant aim to add fresh and even greater honours to the title which has now come to you so that to those who follow after you may come a yet more honourable heritage.

"With this fine purpose always as your guide, go forward in your great comradeship, never faltering nor complaining, however hard the way, but facing it all with a laugh and a light heart, fighting on even when your strength to fight has gone, firm in your resolution that nothing but the very best shall be good enough for you to give. When, whether in battle or in peace, in your discipline or your turnout, in training or in sport—then, and only then, will you prove worthy of this great inheritance. Your Regiment and your county will be looking to you. I know that they will not watch in vain.

"May all good fortune go with you, 'one and all,' and remember, there is an account for you to settle with the enemy—a very personal account. Go to it with a will."

Digitized by Google

The Band of the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I.

The Band of the 1st Battalion D.C.L.I. left India for Iraq in November, 1941. After giving numerous concerts to the 1st Battalion and neighbouring units, they left the Regiment in March, 1942, for an extensive tour under their Bandmaster, Mr. W. H. Walden-Mills. This tour took them through Iraq, Kurdistan and Persia, and as they were, at that time, the only British band in the Middle East, their services were in great demand. Leaving Iraq in October, 1942, they proceeded overland to Egypt, where they spent six months, after which they toured through Palestine, Lebanon, Africa, Transjordan and the Sinai Desert, playing to both service and civilian audiences. Returning again to Egypt, they gave a series of concerts for the Rand Light Infantry, the regiment of the South African Defence Forces allied to the D.C.L.I. In April, 1943, they embarked for Tripoli, where they had the honour of playing for His Majesty King George VI, Generals Alexander and Montgomery and the famous 8th Army. After two months in Tripoli the band returned to Egypt where, in February, 1944, they played for a review of the 10th Armoured Division by General Maitland-Wilson. Soon afterwards they returned to England to re-equip.

France, 1939—The British Expeditionary Force

1939 One of the first units to go abroad at the outbreak of the war was the 2nd Battalion of the D.C.L.I., which proceeded to France on 1st October, 1939, and served with the British Expeditionary Force in the Maginot Line. On 28th May, 1940, the Germans attacked Holland and Belgium with blitzkrieg methods, and within five days the Dutch were forced to surrender. British troops, including the D.C.L.I., moved into Belgium to attempt to prevent the German advance, but the Germans pierced the French line and all attempts at stopping them failed. They defeated the 9th French Army, and it seemed that the destruction of the entire British force could not be avoided. The British, however, hung on to the strip of coast around Dunkirk until they were evacuated by the Navy. The 2nd Battalion played a gallant part in the rearguard action on the road to Dunkirk, and its losses were not light. The greater part of the battalion, however, got back to England.

The 2nd Battalion, together with all other units of the D.C.L.I. stationed in England, took up its stand on the beaches of this country during the summer of 1940. The expected invasion

Digitized by Google

of these shores did not take place, and the Regiment was able to continue its training and preparation for the moment when the British Army could take the offensive again.

The North African Campaign

1943 The 2nd Battalion of the D.C.L.I. formed part of the 1st Army during the struggle in North Africa. It arrived in Tunisia in March, 1943, and within a few weeks was engaged in very heavy fighting. The battalion made contact with the enemy on 11th April at a place called Sidi Nsir, to the east of Beja on the Beja—Mateur Road. This road and the adjoining countryside had been the scene of heavy fighting since November, 1942. It was essential that the road junction at Beja should be held if the British army was to remain in Tunisia, as the loss of Beja would have meant that the position at Medjez el Bab would not have been tenable. If the 1st Army was to advance on Tunis the throwing back of the enemy in the Beja-Mateur area was a necessary preliminary. The 2nd Battalion played a very gallant part in the clearing of high ground south of Sidi Nsir and in wiping out the big enemy salient at Sedjenane. Having secured the north flank, the battalion took part in the victorious advance to Massicaut. This fighting decided the fate of Tunis, for after the British infantry reached Massecaut there was no longer any question that Tunis would fall within a few days. This advance was made under most difficult conditions in hilly country, and often in most wretched weather. The Beja road itself runs between sharp hillsides on which there is a good deal of tangled growth, including cactus which reaches a great height, and in places is almost impenetrable. These conditions called for troops with great powers of endurance.

The following quotation is taken from the leading article of a well-known daily paper: " from all accounts, though the information so far received is scanty, it appears that the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry, in the fiercest fighting in Tunisia, covered themselves with glory. More will be known later of their part in the great battles which, when the last Axis pockets in the Cap Bon pennisula were emptied, finally eliminated the German and Italian armies from Africa."

The Italian Campaign, 1943

1943 There was a lull after the expulsion of the Axis forces from Africa until the night of 9th-10th July, 1943, when the Allies invaded Sicily. This campaign only lasted thirty-

Digitized by Google

eight days, and was quickly followed by the invasion of the Italian mainland on 3rd September, 1943.

It was not until the early summer of 1944 that it was disclosed officially that the 2nd Battalion had been serving in Italy with both the 5th and 8th Armies. They played a very conspicuous part in General Alexander's great offensive against the Gustav Line which opened on 12th May. In this battle one fortified feature on the banks of the River Rapido was a piece of high ground known as Point 63, which occupied a commanding position overlooking the river. After heavy fighting, which lasted all day, the feature was finally captured by the D.C.L.I. As a result, an important bridgehead was consolidated across the river and the success of the whole operation was ensured. Another key point in the German defences was the famous stronghold of Cassino, in the struggle for which the D.C.L.I. took a very active part.

In June, 1944, they saw a great deal of hard fighting in the Cassamaggoire area, and on 1st July they occupied Petrignano. Their advance column was attacked by a strong enemy force with armoured and artillery support, but the Cornwalls pushed ahead. They cleared Montevarchi, and on 18th July and afterwards continued their attack northwards against stubborn opposition. Later the battalion made an attack upon the Icontro Monastery, south-east of Florence.

Security prevents anything further being mentioned about this campaign, and their full share in the battle for Italy will not be known until the campaign is brought to an end.

The D.C.L.I. in Normandy

1944 On the morning of 6th June, 1944, the world learned that the Allies had landed in France, and that the long-awaited invasion of Hitler's Europe had begun.

On 22nd August it was announced officially that a battalion of the D.C.L.I. (later disclosed as the 5th Battalion) had landed in Normandy with a West-Country division on 23rd June and had been engaged in heavy fighting. Four days after landing, the Regiment knocked out three enemy tanks south of Cheux in a sharp action which helped to push the British salient beyond Grainville. The Cornwalls remained in action in the salient which cut the road from Caen to Villers Bocage. They captured the villages of Verson and Fontaine Etoupefour on 4th July, and recaptured them four days later after the enemy had temporarily re-occupied the positions.

Digitized by Google

One of the most thrilling incidents in the campaign took place in the early days in Normandy in the Bocage country, between the Rivers Orne and Odon. There, in a fork between the rivers, is a prominent ridge, and one night, under cover of darkness, two men stealthily crept out into a bullet-swept No Man's Land and proudly erected a notice-board on which had been painted " The Cornwall Hill."

H. P. Twyford, the famous War Correspondent of the *Western Morning News*, wrote this inspiring account at the time : " It marks a little bit of this Normandy battlefield that will be for ever Cornwall, for it was over the slopes and crest of this ridge that officers and men of the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry fought for days a battle which must find a prominent place when the history of this campaign comes to be written."

" Cornwall Hill " will always rank in fame as the " Hill 60 " of this campaign.

A military observer said that " throughout the campaign the men of the D.C.L.I. fought with great distinction. No regiment of the British liberation army has fought with more dash and courage. Between the bitter struggle on Hill 112, when the D.C.L.I. did so much to break the cream of the German Army, and the Seine crossing, they fought a brilliant surprise action at Le Plessis Grimault on 7th August, and were constantly in the forefront pinning and mauling the Germans while the famous American outflanking movement was in course of preparation."

The 5th Battalion fought a major action on 25th August, 1944, when they took part in the assault crossing of the Seine with other West Country units. They extended their bridgeheads after severe fighting, and so weakened enemy opposition that by 4 p.m. on 26th August it was possible to bridge the river. The Battalion fought its way into Pressagny, and then cleared some wooded positions of the enemy to give safe passage to the British armour now beginning its drive into Belgium and Holland.

In September, 1944, it was necessary to send infantry with stores to the relief of the 1st Airborne Division, which was cut off at Arnhem, and the D.C.L.I. were selected for the task. Riding on Sherman tanks, they made a dash of thirty miles an hour through ten miles of enemy occupied country. The tanks became separated from the Bren carriers which accompanied them, and found themselves followed by six German

Digitized by Google

Tiger tanks. The officer in charge of the relief column placed Piat guns in the ditches and set booby traps, and managed to knock out four of the Tigers. The advance went on and the river was reached, but it was found to be impossible to send the stores across to the airborne division as the "ducks" slipped from the dyke road into the ditch. Though the supplies did not get through, the D.C.L.I. had made as thrilling and spectacular a dash as has ever been undertaken by British infantry.

The Epic Stand at Hoven

1944 The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry took part in the Anglo-American offensive of 18th November, 1944, when the West Country men captured the village of Hochheid, cut the main escape route of the Germans in Geilenkirchen and pushed two-thirds of the way through the thick wood stretching north-east from Hochheid. The battalion held on there for four days, shelled incessantly by heavy guns, fighting and living under the most appalling conditions, in trenches half full of water. At the extreme tip of this wood, on rising ground, lay the village of Hoven which was strongly held by the enemy, and across the narrow valley, and overlooked from Hoven, stood Wurms, a vital objective for the Americans attacking from the south-west. The British commander thought that if Hoven could be captured the task of the Americans on the other side of the valley could be greatly lightened, and he gave orders for the 5th Battalion to attack the village.

The D.C.L.I. attack on this village stronghold of Hoven started at two o'clock on 22nd November, in pouring rain. The supply problem was difficult, as all ammunition and supplies had to be manhandled through the woods and all wounded had to be brought in on the backs of the stretcher-bearers. The first company to advance came under murderous fire from spandaus, mortars and 88's from both flanks, and was practically wiped out. The next company fought its way forward to a position from which it was possible to neutralise the enemy fire with Piats, mortars and Brens. At three o'clock another part of the battalion worked its way round the flank and fought its way into the village of Hoven at the point of the bayonet. Darkness descended and orders were received that the village must be held until twelve noon on the next day. During the night some food and ammunition was brought up to the tiny garrison, but all attempts at reinforcement failed.

Digitized by Google

When daylight came the Germans threw in everything they could muster, but they were driven off until, finally, the garrison had no more ammunition. At twelve noon they wirelessed to the British headquarters for all available artillery to be brought to bear on the village in the hopes of killing the Germans, who were in the open, the D.C.L.I. having taken shelter in the trenches and cellars. When the artillery fire ceased seven of the D.C.L.I., all that remained, crept back to the battalion lines. The battalion had endured the heaviest shelling from the Siegfried line for twenty-four hours and had enabled the Americans to push forward.

The next day the Corps Commander visited the battalion and thanked officers and men for their gallantry. He said that he had almost every type of regiment in the army under his command, including Guards, but he had never, in all his service, met such a magnificent fighting battalion as that of the 5th Battalion. When the full story of the D.C.L.I. in the present war comes to be written, the name of Hoven will certainly occupy a very distinguished place in it.

In February, 1945, it was made known that the D.C.L.I. had been in action with the Canadian First Army between the Maas and the Rhine, and on 25th March the Regiment was named as taking part in the great offensive which bridged the lower Rhine and swept on for the final destruction of Hitler's Germany.

The Connection of the Home Guard with the Regiment

The men of Cornwall rallied to the call of the Secretary of State for War on 14th May, 1940, when the threat of German invasion was imminent. Several battalions of Home Guard were raised in the county and were affiliated to the D.C.L.I. under the administration of the Territorial Army Association. The connection of the Home Guard with the County Regiment was similar to that of the 1st and 2nd Volunteer Battalions in the World War of 1914-18, and the duties undertaken were much the same. The existence of the Home Guard helped to ward off the danger of invasion and released the Regular Army for service overseas. Boys too young for the Home Guard have been able to join the Army Cadet Force, a pre-service organisation affiliated to the D.C.L.I. Four battalions of the Cadet Force have been raised in Cornwall.

Thus comes to a close another chapter in the history of The

Digitized by Google

Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry, but it is only a chapter as the history of the Regiment goes on from day to day. Individual men making up the Regiment pass away, but the Regiment itself never dies. Cornishmen may well be proud of it, for no regiment in the British Army has a finer record.

MISCELLANEOUS INFORMATION.

Colonel of the Regiment : General Sir Walter K. Venning, G.C.B., C.M.G., C.B.E., M.C.

Allied Regiments

Allied Regiment of the Canadian Militia : The Battleford Light Infantry.

Allied Regiment of the Union of South African Defence Forces : The 11th Infantry (Rand Light Infantry).

Allied Battalion of Australian Infantry : 46th Battalion The Brighton Rifles.

Affiliated Ship of the Royal Navy : H.M.S. Black Prince.

The Colours

The First, or King's Colour, is a Union flag fringed with gold. In the centre is a circle bearing the Regimental Title surmounted by a Crown. The Regimental Battle Honours gained during the war of 1914-18 are placed on the horizontal arm of the St. George's Cross on yellow scrolls. The battalion number is placed within the central circle.

The Second, or Regimental Colour, is a White flag fringed with gold, thereon a red St. George's Cross. In the centre within a circle bearing the Regimental Title surmounted by a Crown, is the number of the battalion. Round the circle is a wreath of united red and white roses, thistles and shamrocks, and round the wreath is a wreath of laurel bearing the Regimental Battle Honours other than those won during the war of 1914-18. These battle honours are on yellow scrolls. At the foot of the St. George's Cross is a united Red and White Rose, which was granted in 1881 to all regiments not authorised to wear a badge on their colours.

Both colours are carried on staffs called "pikes," surmounted by a Crown and the Royal Crest, a lion in gilt, and have red and gold cords and tassels hanging therefrom.

All the old Regimental Colours, with two exceptions, are laid up in Bodmin Parish Church.

Digitized by Google

Regimental Badges and Buttons

The Cap Badge.—A bugle surmounted by the Duke of Cornwall's coronet; on a scroll the word "Cornwall"; red patch behind badge. The bugle of the cap-badge is the emblem of Light Infantry.

The Collar Badge.—Officers' full dress badge consists of a blue enamel shield with fifteen gold bezants superimposed. A scroll bearing the motto, "One and All"; the whole ensigned with the coronet of the Duke of Cornwall.

The badge worn by other ranks is the same as the above, except that it is made entirely of brass.

The fifteen gold bezants have been used on the coat of arms of many Cornish families since the time of the Crusades. Richard, Earl of Cornwall, and son of King John, bore on his coat of arms a black border studded with these bezants—*i.e.*, gold coins of Byzantium.

The Regimental Buttons.—The castle and lion as shown in the Great Seal of the Duchy of Cornwall, pendant therefrom a bugle horn stringed, the whole ensigned with the Royal Ducal coronet and encircled by the title of the Regiment.

Regimental Colours.—Green, white and red. (Green for Light Infantry, white for the facings, and red for the "Red Feathers.")

The Regimental Marches

"*One and All.*"—Origin obscure, but was being used as regimental quickstep by the 32nd Regiment prior to 1881. The 46th Regiment appear to have used the tune "Rosin the Beau" as their march prior to that date, but on amalgamation the two regiments adopted the tune "One and All."

"*Trelawney.*"—Origin also obscure, but definitely connected with the imprisonment of Trelawny, Bishop of Bristol, in the Tower in 1688. Until 1933 this tune was always played as a regimental march in addition to "One and All," although no authority existed for its use.

The Combined Marches.—The present Regimental March, combining the two tunes, was written in 1934 and authorized by the War Office in the same year. The Regimental March is played at the rate of 140 paces to the minute.

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY

OF

THE DURHAM LIGHT INFANTRY

(1ST AND 2ND BATTALIONS)

Digitized by Google

3rd Edition (revised) March, 1938.

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY

OF

The Durham Light Infantry

(1ST AND 2ND BATTALIONS)

BATTLE HONOURS.

"**Salamanca,**" "**Vittoria,**" "**Pyrenees,**" "**Nivelle,**" "**Orthes,**" "**Peninsula,**" "**Alma,**" "**Inkerman,**" "**Sevastopol,**" "**Reshire,**" "**Bushire,**" "**Koosh-ab,**" "**Persia,**" "**New Zealand,**" "**Relief of Ladysmith,**" "**South Africa, 1899-1902,**" "**Afghanistan, 1919.**"

THE GREAT WAR—37 BATTALIONS.

"**Aisne, 1914, '18,**" "Armentières, 1914," "**Ypres, 1915, '17, '18,**" "Gravenstafel," "St. Julien," "Frezenberg," "Bellewaarde," "**Hooge, 1915,**" "**Loos,**" "**Somme, 1916, '18,**" "Albert, 1916, '18," "Bazentin," "Delville Wood," "Pozières," "Guillemont," "Flers-Courcelette," "Morval," "Le Transloy," "Ancre Heights," "**Arras, 1917, '18,**" "Scarpe, 1917," "Arleux," "Hill 70," "**Messines, 1917,**" "Pilckem," "Langemarck, 1917," "Menin Road," "Polygon Wood," "Broodseinde," "Passchendaele," "Cambrai, 1917, '18," "St. Quentin," "Rosières," "**Lys,**" "Estaires," "Hazebrouck," "Bailleul," "Kemmel," "Scherpenberg," "Marne, 1918," "Tardenois," "Bapaume, 1918," "**Hindenburg Line,**" "Havrincourt," "Epéhy," "Canal du Nord," "St. Quentin Canal," "Beaurevoir," "Courtrai," "Selle," "**Sambre,**" "France and Flanders, 1914-18." "Piave," "Vittorio Veneto," "Italy, 1917-18." "Macedonia, 1916-18." "Egypt, 1915-16." "N.W. Frontier India, 1915, 1916-17." "Archangel, 1918-19."

ALDERSHOT:
GALE & POLDEN, LTD.
WELLINGTON WORKS
1938

Digitized by Google

ALDERSHOT:
PRINTED BY GALE & POLDEN, LTD.
WELLINGTON WORKS.

4083-L

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

THIS Short History of the 1st and 2nd Battalions has been compiled with a view to providing the essential information that all ranks should possess of their Regiment, and also a suitable text-book for use in the Regimental Schools.

It is not intended as a work of reference—The History of the Regiment up to 1913, written by Colonel Hon. W. L. Vane and the Record of Service, contained in Regimental Standing Orders, may be consulted for that purpose.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE REGIMENT

In the old days, when the Regular Army was first being formed, regiments were not called by the names of the English Counties, from which their men came, as most of them are to-day, but were given numbers instead. Even now many of the older regiments are very proud of these numbers, and still like to refer to them.

Regimental Numbers.

In 1756, when England was at war with France, more soldiers were needed, and a second battalion was raised for the 23rd Regiment (General Huske's), now called the Royal Welch Fusiliers. Two years later this battalion was made a separate regiment, being taken away from the 23rd and given the number "68." Lieut.-Colonel John Lambton, grandfather of the first Earl Durham, was appointed to command the new regiment. This was the birth of the Regiment, and it remained in the Army List for many years to come as the 68th Foot. Most of the men who filled its ranks came from County Durham, and in 1783 it was described for the first time as "Durham." The title, however, remained unchanged until the year 1808, when a very important event in the history of the Regiment took place.

1756.

1758.

At this time England was at the height of those long struggles with France from which there had never really been any lasting peace since the 68th had first been formed.

1808.

The great French General, Napoleon, was invading the peninsula of Spain and Portugal. English troops, under the Duke of Wellington, were sent to save the Spaniards and Portuguese by driving the French armies back across the Pyrenees to France. But the

Digitized by Google

British Army had deteriorated during the long wars of the previous century, and was becoming out-of-date. Moreover, it was found that, in order to defeat the enemy in wild and difficult country, troops were needed for "skirmishing." That is to say, they had to march long distances, forming a screen behind which the rest of the army could move safely into position, and had always to be prepared to fight, for they were invariably the first to come into contact with the enemy. The old, heavily equipped infantry were at a disadvantage under these conditions, and their training had hardly improved since the days of Frederick the Great. So General Sir John Moore, who originated Light Infantry Training in the British Army, in 1808, picked out a few regiments for this honour, which entailed skill, a high pitch of training, discipline, and special equipment. They were given the additional title of "Light Infantry."

Light Infantry.

Among the regiments selected for this honour was the 68th Foot, the third Light Infantry regiment to be created, and it received the title of "68th Light Infantry," a title which remained unaltered for the next seventy-three years.

68th Light Infantry.

For many years the 68th, first as an ordinary foot regiment, then as a regiment of Light Infantry, had looked to the County of Durham to fill its ranks with recruits. Therefore, when the present system of naming regiments after the counties, from which their men came, was being evolved in 1881, the 68th Light Infantry received the title, which it bears to-day—the 1st Battalion The Durham Light Infantry.

1881 : 1st Bn. The Durham Light Infantry.

For the history of the 2nd Battalion we must go back to the year 1839, shifting the scene to India. In those days India was not governed directly by the British Government, or by an Indian Government as it is to-day,

1839.

Digitized by Google

but by a Company called the Honourable East India Company, which was given special privileges and authority from the home Government.

For many years the Company's servants had worked in India developing the country, carrying on their part of the world-wide struggle with the French, and gradually building up the greatest Empire the world has ever seen. In order to do this, the Company had to have soldiers; and it kept up an army largely composed of native troops, but strengthened by a backbone of its own white regiments. These English regiments, although not much has been written of their early history, played a leading part in the founding of the Indian Empire.

2nd Bombay European Regiment.

In 1839 the East India Company was concentrating most of its troops in the north, where the first of our three wars with Afghanistan was taking place. More troops were needed to replace the army on the frontier, and to keep order in India. This was especially the case in the Presidency of Bombay—for the Bombay Army had marched through the passes into Afghanistan. So, among other regiments, was formed the 2nd Bombay European Regiment. It was formed as Light Infantry and was stationed at Poona in the Bombay Presidency.

1855 : Bombay Light Infantry.

In 1855 the new regiment's name was changed to 2nd European Regiment, Bombay Light Infantry. After the Indian Mutiny of 1857 had been stamped out, Queen Victoria decided to take over the Government of India from the Company; and eventually she became the Queen Empress. So all the old Company's troops became regular troops of the Queen, and the Honourable East India Company passed from existence. The process of changing occupied a few years, and was not complete until 1862, when the old 2nd European Regiment became the 106th Bombay Light Infantry, recruiting in the County of Durham.

1862 : 106th Bombay Light Infantry.

Digitized by Google

1881 : 2nd Bn. The Durham Light Infantry.

The next, and final change, took place in the same year that the 68th became the 1st Battalion The Durham Light Infantry, that is, in 1881, when the present system of two battalion regiments with a single depot, was started. The 106th was now made part of the same regiment as the 68th, and became the 2nd Battalion The Durham Light Infantry.

Digitized by Google

THE SERVICES of the REGIMENT

Raids on the Coast of France.

When the 68th Foot was formed in 1758, England was at war with France, the beginning of a long drawn out struggle in Europe, in America, and in the East Indies. During these early years many raids were made across the channel, the 68th landing three times on the French coast near, or at, Cherbourg in expeditions under the Duke of Marlborough.

1764: West Indies.

In 1764 the Regiment was sent to the West Indies. These valuable islands, lying strung out across the Caribbean Sea, produce sugar, fruit, spices, and other necessities of life, besides providing good harbours for ships of trade and war. Thus, we found ourselves almost continually fighting for their possession either with the French or Spaniards—often both—and sometimes against the native inhabitants. It was against these last, a race called the Caribs, who give their name to the Caribbean Sea, that the 68th were sent to fight in the island of St. Vincent in 1764.

Faithful.

The gallant conduct of the Regiment on this occasion earned it the title of "Faithful." This title was held for some years, but because other regiments also claimed it for similar services, it was given up, while the 68th was in Ireland in 1780.

1795: St. Lucia and Granada.

After a period of service at home the 68th were sent out again to the West Indies, where the French had stirred up the negroes against the British. These

Digitized by Google

islands had been captured from the French in a brilliant campaign two years earlier. Unfortunately the unhealthy climate did much to undermine the ranks of the already small British garrisons. At length affairs took a very serious turn, and the negro population of the fever-ridden islands broke into armed revolt. The French immediately came to the assistance of the rebels, until the British were driven from St. Lucia; but succeeded in keeping a precarious foothold, after some fighting, in Granada.

1798 : Ireland.

The 68th, while on garrison duty in Ireland, provided the escort for the advanced guns of a force, sent out against some rebels in Dublin.

1801 : West Indies, Martinique, Barbadoes, and Dominica.

In 1801 the 68th, then organized into two battalions, sailed for the third time to the West Indies, and landed in the islands of Martinique and Barbadoes. They were soon, however, sent to Dominica, where a negro regiment, the 8th West India Regiment, had mutinied. When the 68th marched up to the fort of Dominica, the negroes were found drawn up in line. The Regiment formed up in line facing them, only fifteen paces away. The habit of discipline had still a strong hold on the mutineers, and they gravely presented arms to the incoming regiment—in spite of the fact they had just murdered their British officers. They were next ordered to lay down their arms, but here obedience failed them, and they opened fire. The 68th fired a volley into them, and then, at the point of the bayonet, drove them into headlong confusion all over the island.

1803 : St. Lucia, Morne Fortuné.

Next year peace was signed with France, and all her West Indian possessions were given back to her.

Digitized by Google

This proved, however, to be only a lull in the storm; for scarcely a year had passed, before war broke out again, and an expedition was once more organized against St. Lucia. The 68th, who were stationed in the British Island of Barbadoes, formed part of the force, which landed on the island, and stormed the fortress of Morne Fortuné. The attack was successful; but the Regiment did not take a very active part, suffering only one casualty: and that much fought-over island, the only one possessing a really good harbour, fell once again into British hands.

Throughout these campaigns in the unhealthy islands of the Caribbean Sea, the Regiment suffered enormous casualties from sickness, which, in the last six months of 1804, took a toll of 670 out of a strength of 806.

1809: WALCHEREN.

The year 1809 had brought no peace with our tireless enemy France. The British Government thought that an attack on the exposed northern flank of the French Empire would help our ally, Austria, and would also cause the Hanoverians of North Germany to revolt against France.

It was therefore decided to send an expedition to Holland, part of which was to land on the island of Walcheren, and capture the valuable port of Flushing. The Regiment formed part of the expedition, and took part in the capture of this sea-port. Once more disease accounted for many casualties; and the whole expedition was soon sent back to England, as it was found that no very great advantage came from the occupation of Walcheren.

This small campaign was merely an offshoot of the far larger war against France all over the world, and proved to be a waste of men and money, which might have been more usefully employed elsewhere.

Digitized by Google

The Peninsular War, 1808–1814.

Napoleon next sought to strangle British trade by closing European ports to British ships, for he had discovered that the destruction of those ships was beyond the power of France at sea.

1811: The 68th arrive in Portugal.

To force Portugal into this scheme, and also to place his brother Joseph on the Spanish throne, he sent 80,000 French troops into the Peninsula. A British Army was immediately organized and despatched to the aid of the threatened nations. By the time the 68th Light Infantry were ordered to Portugal the war had been waged for three years with varying fortunes; most of Spain was in the hands of the French invaders, but the Duke of Wellington had driven them from Portugal.

The main approaches to Spain were barred by the war-scarred fortresses of Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajos, behind which the French rallied their armies, and from which they frequently launched attacks into Portugal. With two brilliant strokes the British stormed these strongholds, the 68th forming part of the covering force, which had been thrown out to prevent the French from interrupting the siege. The 68th did not, however, take part in the actual assault on either fortress. The British then pursued the retreating French troops, occupied the important town of Salamanca, and continued to press the enemy, until forcing him to stand and fight six miles beyond that town, on the heights of Villares. Severe fighting took place, but all attempts to dislodge the British troops failed. On the evening of June 20th, 1812, the Regiment received the order to descend the hill, and capture the village of Moresco. This was achieved without opposition, but the French soon counter-attacked, and were twice driven back by the 68th. By now it was dark and the Regiment was ordered to abandon the village. Among the casualties of this

Digitized by Google

day was Captain Mackay, who was bayoneted twenty-two times, but recovered, and continued to serve.

After a further advance the British were withdrawn to Salamanca, where they were attacked by a greatly reinforced French Army. For a time the situation was critical indeed, but the French Commander, in his efforts to envelop the British, spread out his force until the French units were widely separated. Wellington did not miss the opportunity, and the enemy were defeated with heavy loss.

Salamanca, July 22nd, 1812.

The Regiment played a great part in the strenuous fighting, and, when the victorious army entered Madrid three weeks later, the 68th had the honour of being the first regiment to march into the Spanish capital.

On the following night the 68th took part in the attack upon the fortress El Retiro. By midnight the British having stormed the three encircling walls, the French surrendered before the final assault took place.

Wellington then marched northwards with the army to attack the French forces in Northern Spain. Burgos was reached on September 17th; but the British failed to take this fort. Wellington, finding that he had drawn superior French forces from all directions, and with his rear threatened, was forced to retreat by the way he had come. Throughout this retreat the Regiment saw much skirmishing, rearguard, and outpost duty. Often famished and drenched to the skin, the men of the 68th suffered heavily from sickness, there being 247 sick by the end of the retreat.

The Retreat from Burgos.

Not until the final British counter-offensive of 1813 do we hear of the Regiment in action again, the winter of 1812-1813 having been spent in quarters at Santo Martino.

Early in 1813 Napoleon was forming a last Grand Army. Driven out of Russia with terrible loss, his

Digitized by Google

armies in Spain weary and defeated, and with most of central Europe simmering with revolt against his domination, he had abandoned his project of world conquest; but was making one last desperate effort to defend his scattered empire.

Wellington, however, began his advance north-eastwards, and soon had the French armies fighting their way back towards the Pyrenees and France. On June 21st, having crossed the River Ebro, he forced the French to make their last great stand on Spanish soil at Vittoria.

Vittoria, June 21st, 1813.

The position was not a good one, and the British troops soon dislodged the enemy. Of this battle an eye-witness has written: "*I don't know that I ever saw the 68th Regiment advance better in line than they did in the Battle of Vittoria; every man was as steady as possible.*" As a result of this action the Emperor Joseph's baggage train fell into the hands of the British.

The French were then followed into the mountains, and in the fighting which ensued upon the heights of Echelar, the brigade, of which the 68th formed part, was complimented by the Commander-in-Chief in the following despatch:—

"*The Lieutenant-General has just been desired by Lord Wellington to say to the Brigade that their attack upon the enemy 'is the most gallant, the finest thing he ever witnessed.' These are the precise words of the Commander of the forces, and Lord Dalhousie has great satisfaction in communicating them.*"

The 68th Light Infantry formed the advanced guard in this action.

Battle of the Nivelle, Nov. 10th, 1813.

The war was now carried into French territory, the French making their next stand on their own ground, on the heights overlooking the River Nivelle; but, being outnumbered by 33,000 men, they were driven off without difficulty. Nevertheless there was

Digitized by Google

some severe fighting, and it is said of the Regiment that it "*made the attack with its usual vivacity . . . and carried the heights after a severe struggle.*"

Orthes, February 24th, 1814.

The pursuit of the French armies was continued into France, and the next action in which the Regiment took part was at Orthes, where the French were attacked in their own chosen position, and defeated after hard fighting.

Peace was shortly afterwards declared, and the 68th returned home in the summer, the following honours: "SALAMANCA," "VITTORIA," "PYRENEES," "NIVELLE," "ORTHES," and "PENINSULA" being placed on the Regimental Colour.

Contrary to the custom of the day, the Regiment had not taken its colours to the Peninsula.

1844: Southern India.

The next time the Regiment saw active service was in 1844, when a detachment of the 2nd Bombay European Regiment, later 2nd Battalion The Durham Light Infantry, formed the European portion of a Field Detachment, sent to quell a rebellion, which had broken out amongst the inhabitants of Kolhapur and Savantwadi, in Southern India. The town of Samanghur was stormed on October 13th in half an hour. The Regiment had four men wounded, although the enemy's losses were between 500 and 600 killed, and an equal number of prisoners.

On December 1st the fortress of Panhala was captured, and eight days later the *petah*, or fortified wall, of Ranga suffered a similar fate. The last action of the campaign took place on December 31st in a defile at Sassadroog, after which the revolt died out.

The Crimean War, 1854-1856.

Eighteen fifty-four found England, for the first time in modern history, in alliance with her traditional

Digitized by Google

enemy, France. The channels, through which we drifted into war with Russia, are too long and obscure to be given in detail. The Czar seized the opportunity of a religious quarrel with the French Emperor to claim the protectorate of the Greek Orthodox Church within the Turkish Empire. The underlying cause of the war, however, was Russia's menace to the existence of Turkey herself; for Turkey controls Russia's shortest sea communications with the outside world by way of the Bosphorus, and the Dardanelles.

England and France saw the threat to Turkey, and intervened in vain. Russia declared war, seized all Turkish territory north of the Danube, and British and French ships concentrated in the Bosphorus. Russia undeterred, destroyed the Turkish fleet, and declared war on England and France. Although Austrian pressure then caused Russia to withdraw her troops from Turkey, England and France decided that they must put an end to Russia's power of committing further aggression, by seizing the naval base of Sevastopol, and destroying the Black Sea Fleet, which had taken refuge in that harbour.

In September 1854, the Allied troops, amongst whom was the 68th Light Infantry, landed in the Crimean Peninsula, near Eupatoria, north of Sevastopol.

The Alma, September 20th, 1854.

The Russian Army was found drawn up on the heights overlooking the Alma stream, and was beaten entirely by British arms, the French failing to bring their strength to bear on the enemy. Here the Regiment was in reserve, but came under shell-fire from the Russian guns.

Following upon the Russian retreat from the Alma into the interior of the Crimea, the Allied armies marched round to the south of Sevastopol. This port was held by a strong Russian garrison, and the British and French took up their position on the heights above the town, and prepared for the siege. The Russian army then returned to strike a blow at

Digitized by Google

the Allied communications, and their base in Balaklava Cove. The attack was beaten off by the fine counter-attack of the British Heavy Cavalry, and finally checked by the brilliant, if ill-conceived, charge of the Light Brigade. Only two companies of the 68th were in action on this day.

Balaklava, October 25th, 1854.

The next Russian attempt to raise the siege was delivered against our right flank on Mount Inkerman. This attack was also doomed to failure, although 72,000 Russians took the field against less than half that number of British and French troops. It was a Regimental custom to mount guard with great-coats over equipment, and as the 68th marched down to the field on Inkerman, they were ordered to throw off their greatcoats, so that they might get more easily at the ammunition in their pouches underneath. They thus found themselves the only regiment conspicuous in red coats. After hard fighting, the 68th drove a large body of the enemy pell-mell into the valley of the Tohernays, and as they worked their way down through most difficult country, their red coats drew the full blast of the fire from the Russian batteries on East Jut; finally, they charged into the broken Russian line with the bayonet, and completed the splendid work of the previous few hours, driving the Regiment of Yakutsk from the field.

Inkerman, November 5th, 1854.

The result of the ten hours' hard fighting at Inkerman was the cessation of all further attempts on the part of the Russians to measure themselves against us in the open field.

The winter, that followed Inkerman, proved to be one of the most trying periods in the history of British arms. Wind, rain, and snow, caused appalling suffering to the troops, encamped on the bleak Russian hillside, overlooking Sevastopol. Shortage of food, warm clothing, and other necessities of life,

Winter before Sebastopol, 1854-55.

Digitized by Google

combined with the complete inadequacy of the transport services, were uncomplainingly endured by the Army. The medical arrangements for the numerous sick were indifferent; though much was done by a devoted band of nurses under Florence Nightingale—the forerunner of our great Nursing Service.

The siege of Sevastopol dragged on throughout the spring and summer of 1855, many an assault failing owing to lack of co-operation between the Allies; while on the Russian side many a sortie, boldly led and gallantly conducted, failed owing to the tenacity and fighting qualities of the British troops.

The fighting at this period was much like the trench warfare of seventy years later in the Great War. Finally, the French, in September, secured the Malakoff, a key position, and the Russian garrison was withdrawn. The defence of Sevastopol had bled Russia of her best troops, and the Czar, deprived, by the fall of the port, of his naval base, and dockyards, asked for terms. The Allies, not disposed to face a second Crimean winter, agreed; and peace was signed.

No account of this campaign would be complete without reference to the two Victoria Crosses earned by the Regiment, which were notified in the *London Gazette* as follows :—

Victoria Cross.—Captain T. de Courcy Hamilton, 68th Light Infantry: For having on the night of May 11th, 1855, during a most determined sortie, boldly charged the enemy with a small force from a battery, of which they had obtained possession in great numbers, thereby saving the works from falling into the hands of the enemy. He was conspicuous on this occasion for his gallantry and daring conduct.

Private John Byrne, 68th Light Infantry: At the Battle of Inkerman, when the Regiment was ordered to retire, Private J. Byrne went back towards the enemy, and, at the risk of his own life, brought in a wounded soldier under fire. On May 11th, 1855, he bravely engaged in a hand-to-hand contest with one of the enemy

Digitized by Google

on the parapet of the work he was defending, prevented the entrance of the enemy, killed his antagonist and captured his arms.

In October, 1855, the following honours were ordered to be borne upon the Regimental Colours : " ALMA," " INKERMAN " and " SEVASTOPOL."

The Persian War 1856–1857.

The next time the Regiment was to see active service was in 1856, when the 2nd European Regiment, Bombay Light Infantry, sailed from India for Persia. This campaign was a secondary result of the Crimean War, which had, through Russian intrigue, caused a rift in our friendly relations with Persia.

The Shah of Persia had laid siege to Herat, in north-western Afghanistan. Great Britain, ever mindful for the safety of the North-West Frontier of India, declared war on Persia, in order to save Herat. In December the British expedition from India landed twelve miles from Bushire, on the Persian Gulf, with very little opposition. The force then moved about two miles inland and took, again with little difficulty, the old Dutch Fort of Reshire, which was defended by some thousand tribesmen of the Tungastoon Hills. The British troops then advanced on Bushire, where they remained, to await reinforcements and reorganization, until February, 1857. On the 3rd the Persians were surprised, and attacked in an entrenched post at Borasjoon, forty-six miles from Bushire. The enemy fled almost without striking a blow; but the incessant rain and fatiguing march told heavily upon the troops.

Reshire and Bushire, 1856.

On the return march to Bushire the British rearguard was attacked, and the action soon became general; but within an hour of the firing of the first shot, the Persians were flying in all directions. Thus the battle of Kooshab proved another easy victory, the Regiment losing 3 killed and 9 wounded. A further expedition,

Kooshab, 1857.

Digitized by Google

in which the Regiment did not take part, was despatched to Mohammera, in the delta of the River Tigris, and won the brilliant little victory of Ahwaz. This brought the campaign to a close, the Shah agreeing to raise the siege at Herat, and the Regiment received four honours for the Regimental Colours, "PERSIA," "RESHIRE," "BUSHIRE" and "KOOSHAB."

The New Zealand Second Maori War. 1864–66.

Fighting between the settlers and natives (Maoris) of New Zealand began in 1860, with a petty dispute about land-ownership. A general rising flared up among the natives, who had long witnessed with misgiving the settlement of the white man in their country. In 1861, after much guerrilla fighting, and many bloody repulses in front of the high Maori stockades, or *pahs*, a truce was reached. Thus ended the first Maori War without the necessity of sending troops out from Britain or India.

The truce, however, was not to last long. Two years later the Maoris in the heart of North Island set up a king of their own, and opened a series of bloodthirsty attacks on the British Settlements; and so opened the Second Maori War.

This war found the 68th Light Infantry in Burma, and in the autumn of 1863, the Regiment embarked for New Zealand. On its arrival, the Maori King had been driven from his capital at Ngaruwahia; but the Maoris had by no means been crushed, and most of the work was still to be done. For many months the campaign continued, and a great deal of bush fighting was the lot of the Regiment—fighting in a very difficult country and against a fierce though gallant and chivalrous enemy.

Among many actions was the assault on the stockade of Gate Pah, which, although unsuccessful, was the scene of great heroism on the part of the British troops. Gradually the hostile bands were broken up and the

Digitized by Google

rebellion crushed. By the close of 1866 peace had been restored, and the 68th embarked for England, having added the name "NEW ZEALAND" to the honours on the Regimental Colour.

Sergeant John Murray was awarded the Victoria Cross: *For his distinguished conduct at Te Ranga, on June 21st, 1864, when the enemy's position was being stormed, in running up to a rifle pit containing from eight to ten of the enemy, and, without any assistance, killing or wounding every one of them. He is stated to have proceeded up the works, fighting desperately and still continuing to bayonet the enemy.*

1885: The Sudan Campaign.

The year 1885 saw the 2nd Durham Light Infantry in Egypt, where it had been sent to stem the advance of the Dervishes who had overrun the Sudan, under the leadership of the Mahdi. Half-hearted efforts on the part of the British Government to stamp out the rebellion had met with no success. An army under Hicks Pasha had been wiped out at El Obeid in 1883, the whole country between Berber and Suakim, ruled by Osman Digna, had gone over to the Mahdi, and at length Khartoum had fallen with the death of General Gordon.

By July, 1885, the British troops, comprising the Gordon Relief Expedition, had been withdrawn from the Sudan, and an Anglo-Egyptian Frontier Force was established at Wadi Halfa, the southernmost frontier post of Egypt, on the Nile. By the autumn of this year the Dervishes, under the Khalifa Abdullah (who had succeeded the Mahdi), were threatening to invade Egypt. To meet this emergency, further British troops were sent to Egypt, and among them the 2nd Battalion, which was moved south to join the Frontier Force at Wadi Halfa.

A Durham Light Infantry detachment of mounted infantry had several engagements with the Mahdists

Digitized by Google

in December, 1885, during which month Lieutenant de Lisle and Sergeant Stuart won the Distinguished Service Order and Distinguished Conduct Medal respectively, for gallantry in action. On December 30th the Battalion took part in the decisive battle of Ginnis, in which the Arabs were completely defeated. After this the British troops were withdrawn, and the 2nd Battalion went to India in 1887.

The Battle of Ginnis, 1885.

The South African War, 1899-1902.

The long-standing difficulties with the Boer Republics, *i.e.*, the Transvaal and Orange Free State, over the status of British subjects, and their attitude towards the British Government, culminated in the presentation of an ultimatum to the British Government by the Transvaal Government, in the autumn of 1899. The terms of the ultimatum were declined by the British Government, and war was declared. The Free State at once allied itself with the Transvaal.

The Republican plan of campaign in the east included the invasion of Natal from the north and west, and the seizing of Ladysmith. At first, before the reinforcements from home had reached South Africa, success crowned the Boer efforts; and General White's small force was compelled to fall back on Ladysmith, where it was soon shut up by the invaders, who became masters of all Natal, north of the River Tugela. To restore the situation General Buller had to modify his plans in order to cross the Tugela, relieve Ladysmith, and to drive the Boers back into the Transvaal in the north, and the Orange Free State in the east.

At the end of 1899 the 1st Battalion arrived in South Africa, and was sent to join the northward advance in Natal. Within a month of disembarking, the Regiment took part in the Battle of Colenso, where General Buller attempted to force the line of the River

Digitized by Google

Tugela, and break through to Ladysmith. The advanced troops were checked with loss, and the British force drew off, the Regiment being immediately detailed for outpost duty at Chieveley.

In the middle of January, 1900, the northward advance was resumed in a second attempt to outflank the Boer positions north of the Tugela, which barred the way to Ladysmith. On January 24th, after crossing the Tugela, and having spent several days in manœuvring to envelop the enemy's right wing, he was attacked frontally, and the hill of Spion Kop stormed by night. During the fight the 1st Battalion was employed in making a demonstration, and finally placed in reserve.

Though Spion Kop had appeared to be the key to the Boer position; when morning came, the captors found themselves under a devastating fire from three sides. So heavy were the casualties, that, at nightfall, the order came to evacuate the hill, just as the Boers were preparing to give up the struggle, and British reinforcements were arriving. Once again the Army found itself back on the south bank of the Tugela.

Vaal Kranz, 1900.

A week later a third attempt was made to open the road to Ladysmith, this time against the left flank of the Boer position, where only the peak of Vaal Kranz stood between us and the open veldt beyond. On February 5th, by 1.30 p.m., the Tugela was crossed by a pontoon bridge, and the Battalion soon found itself in open ground under fire.

The first hill was ascended, the Boers running down the far slope, and the enemy, on the second hill, were also driven off. But here again, as at Spion Kop, it was found that the Boers entrenched on a third hill, could bring a heavy fire to bear upon the newly-captured positions; and the advance was checked. After three days, the captors of Vaal Kranz were withdrawn; and so ended General Buller's third attempt to relieve Ladysmith.

Digitized by Google

In his history of the war, Sir A. Conan Doyle writes :—

" The attack (on Vaal Kranz) was led by the Durham Light Infantry of Lyttleton's Brigade, followed by the 3rd Rifles (3rd K.R.R.), with the Scottish Rifles and 1st Rifles (1st Rifle Brigade) in support. Never did the old Light Division of Peninsula fame go up a Spanish hillside with greater spirit and dash than these their descendants, facing the slope of Vaal Kranz. In open order they moved across the plain, with a superb disregard of the crash and patter of shrapnel, and then up they went, the flitting figures springing from cover to cover, stooping, darting, crouching, running, until with their glasses the spectators on Swartz Kop could see the gleam of bayonets and the strain of furious, rushing men upon the summit, as the last Boers were driven from their trenches."

Pieters Hill.

A fourth attempt, at the end of February, was to be successful. After several days of costly attacks, in which the Regiment took part, the northern buttress was stormed on the 27th, and the remainder of the Boer defences collapsed. At last the way to Ladysmith lay open, the Tugela was finally crossed, and Buller's cavalry joined hands with the gallant defenders, who had resolutely held the town for four months.

Relief of Ladysmith, 1900.

Unfortunately, the Boers were allowed to draw off unpursued. Shortly after the Relief, a Special Service Company, found from the Volunteer Battalions, Durham Light Infantry, joined the 1st Battalion. This Company remained with the Battalion during the advance northwards, taking part in the actions at Sunday's River, Mount Prospect Farm, Vermaak's Kraal and Laing's Nek. This Special Service Company of volunteers was relieved after a year by another, from England, and this in turn relieved by a third shortly before the conclusion of hostilities.

Meanwhile the Boers had been driven out of all Natal but a narrow northern strip; and General

Digitized by Google

Buller's Army in Natal had joined hands with Lord Roberts, who had relieved the beleaguered garrison of Kimberley, capturing the Boer leader, Cronje, taking the capital of the Orange Free State, Bloemfontein, and shortly afterwards entering Pretoria, the capital of the Transvaal. Thus finished the major operations against the Boers, though many weary months of guerrilla warfare remained—months in which de Wet, Botha, and other elusive Boer leaders, were gradually hunted down, but not until they had succeeded in prolonging the struggle for nearly two years. During these two years the 1st Battalion took part in the Transvaal in a series of operations, in the earlier, as a part of a large force, and in the later operations, split up among the various columns operating against the mobile and elusive enemy. The operations of the 1st Battalion during the period were practically entirely in the Transvaal.

In the closing months of the war the Battalion occupied a blockhouse line in the eastern Transvaal, on the Swaziland Border.

The Burma Mounted Infantry.

Although the 2nd Battalion did not go to South Africa as a unit, it was well represented there, and, in January, 1900, sent a company of mounted infantry, forming part of the Burma Mounted Infantry. This part of the Regiment accompanied Lord Roberts in his advance to Bloemfontein, and was specially distinguished in the unfortunate action on March 31st at Sannah's Post. This action is described in Brigadier-General Broadwood's despatch in the following words :—

Sannah's Post.

" 'Q' Battery, owing to its losses in the retirement, was compelled to come into action within 1,200 *yards of the spruit, and the Durham Light Infantry Company of mounted infantry, which was acting as right flank guard to the retirement, promptly occupied a position on the right and left flank of the Battery, this checked any intention the enemy had of advancing from the spruit. . .*

Digitized by Google

The action of 'Q' Battery, the company of Durham Light Infantry . . . being specially worthy of notice."

In Lord Roberts' advance to the mining centre of Johannesburg and to Pretoria, the company was engaged in some twenty-eight fights, among them being Thabanchu, Sannah's Post, Hout Nek, Zand River, Lindley, Dorn Kop and Diamond Hill. Finally during the "cleaning up" operations the company was engaged in the pursuit of de Wet.

Officers and men of both battalions were present as part of mounted infantry detachments in the numerous actions all over South Africa during 1901 and 1902, before the Boer resistance was finally stamped out. For this campaign "RELIEF OF LADYSMITH" and "SOUTH AFRICA, 1899-1902" were added to the battle honours on the Regimental Colour.

NORTH-WEST FRONTIER OF INDIA, 1914-1915 AND 1916-1917.

In February, 1914, the 1st Battalion took part in a short but very successful campaign against the Bunerwals, on the Indian North-West Frontier. The Great War commenced later in this year, but the 1st Battalion was one of the regiments retained in India throughout the whole period. For it, continual frontier service followed, the Battalion remaining out on the Mohmand blockade line until the beginning of 1917; and it was afterwards employed in supporting the moves of the Chitral Reliefs.

1914-1918: THE GREAT WAR.

An Austrian Archduke was murdered at Serajevo by Serbians. Austria, after the issue of an unreasonable ultimatum, and secretly encouraged by Germany, went to war with Serbia. Russia, an old ally of Serbia, declared war on Austria. Germany, on this, declared war on Russia. France, bound to Russia by an alliance, consequently became a possible

Digitized by Google

source of danger to Germany, and the latter invaded Belgium with a view to hostilities against France. This violation of a treaty between France, Germany, and Great Britain, to guarantee the neutrality of Belgium, caused Great Britain, after the issue of an ultimatum, to declare war on Germany on August 4th, 1914. With Great Britain her dominions and colonies entered the war.

Japan, and later Italy, ranged themselves on the side of Great Britain, France and Belgium, still later Portugal and Roumania, joined this combination of Powers known as "The Allies," and eventually, in 1917, owing to Germany's unrestricted submarine warfare, America also came to their assistance. Turkey joined Germany and Austria, as also did Bulgaria.

The first troops of the British Expeditionary Force sailed for France on August 9th, 1914.

During the first month of the Great War, the 2nd Battalion, who belonged to the 18th Brigade, 6th Division, were retained in England; and so did not take part in the opening stages of the campaign, the Retreat from Mons, and the victory of the Marne.

Sailing, however, on September 8th, 1914, for France, the 2nd Battalion arrived in time for the later stages of the Battle of the Aisne, entering the trenches north of Troyon on the Chemin-des-Dames on September 18th, 1914.

The Aisne, 1914.

Next day the position was heavily attacked, but the Battalion front was held intact. In this, its first action of the Great War, the Battalion lost 12 officers and 167 other ranks killed and wounded.

As the Western Front began to stabilize between Switzerland and the North Sea, it became clear that the British position, with its long line of communications crossing those of three French Armies, was out of place on the Aisne. Consequently, on October 3rd the British began to move northwards into

Digitized by Google

Flanders, to a position close to, and covering, our base, and the Channel ports. Thus the Battalion found itself at Hazebrouck, and the advance on Armentières began on October 13th, the Battalion taking part, in a successful attack on Vieux Berquin, and two days later, in the capture of Ennetieres.

Ypres, 1914.

On October 20th the Germans attacked this village, and drove in the 18th Brigade front. From the 21st to the 31st the Battalion held the line at Bois Grenier, about the centre of the 6th Division line from La Boutillerie to Rue-de-Bois, and stopped any further advances of the enemy in spite of severe losses from shell-fire, the October casualties amounting to 13 officers and 230 other ranks killed and wounded, and 1 officer and 213 other ranks missing. The Battalion continued to hold the line about Armentières, with intervals of rest in billets, until May, 1915.

During May, the 6th Division moved farther north in order to join the newly-formed VI Corps in the Ypres Salient, the Battalion holding the line near Potijze, and on the banks of the Yser Canal during June and July. At the end of the latter month the casualties, since November, had amounted to 8 officers and 300 other ranks killed and wounded.

Ypres, 1915.

On August 9th the Battalion was one of the two leading battalions of the 18th Brigade in the successful attack of the 6th Division upon Hooge, which commenced at 3.15 a.m. By 8 a.m. all objectives had been gained and consolidated. The captured position was heavily shelled after it had been occupied by the Battalion, 12 officers and 419 other ranks being killed and wounded and 100 other ranks reported as missing. Of this action, the Divisional Commander, Major-General W. N. Congreve, V.C., wrote to Lord Durham as follows :—

Hooge, August 9th, 1915.

Digitized by Google

" Dear Lord Durham,

" You may like to hear how well the 2nd Battalion of your County Regiment has done. On August 9th my Division attacked Hooge, your Regiment was one of the attacking line. They took the hill with little loss, and accounted for all the Germans on it. They then entrenched the position and wired it and occupied the trenches. This was all done by 8 a.m. From that hour on the Germans poured heavily shells all over them, and, I am sorry to say, caused them nearly 500 casualties.

" Not a man came away until the Battalion was relieved about midnight, and even then 3 officers and 40 men stayed on because they had not been relieved all that night and well into the next day, and a non-commissioned officer and 36 men stayed another twenty-four hours longer.

" Most of this time they were exposed to heavy shell-fire, the demoralizing effect of which can only be estimated by those who have seen it. I saw the Battalion after it had come back.

" The men were as cheery and as proud of themselves as possible, and ready to meet any number of Germans, for whom they have conceived a great contempt. I have told them that I am writing to report their fine conduct to you.

" From first to last they did splendidly.

" Believe me,

" Yours sincerely,

" (Sgd.) W. N. Congreve."

The Army Commander, General Sir Herbert Plumer, K.C.B., addressed the Battalion a few days later and thanked it for its services.

Ypres, 1915-16.

From September, 1915, to March, 1916, the Battalion occupied trenches east of Ypres with the usual periods of rest, the casualties during these seven months of trench warfare being 14 officers and 372 other ranks killed and wounded. After a short rest in the vicinity of

Digitized by Google

Calais the Battalion returned to the Ypres trenches, remaining there until the end of July, and sustaining casualties to the extent of 8 more officers and 208 other ranks killed and wounded.

On August 2nd the Battalion moved south to the Somme area, and entered the line at Beaumont Hamel.

Battle of the Somme, 1916.

Early in September it was transferred to the district east of Albert, and took part in the big attack of September 15th near Ginchy. The attack on the Battalion front was completely successful, 500 yards of the enemy trenches being taken. On the next day a further attack was held up by machine-gun fire, resulting in heavy casualties. On the 25th it took part in a successful attack on Les Bouefs, capturing 200 prisoners and 3 machine guns. On October 15th it suffered heavy casualties in an attack near Gueudecourt.

Casualties during the Battle of the Somme amounted to 25 officers and 490 other ranks killed and wounded and 62 other ranks missing.

January and February, 1917, were spent in the Cambrai sector, and a successful raid was carried out on the enemy's lines on February 10th. From March to October, except for five weeks' rest in July and August, the Battalion held the line in the Loos sector. During this period there was much raiding activity on both sides.

Cambrai, 1917.

On November 15th, the Battalion arrived at Peronne, and played a leading part in the Battle of Cambrai, which commenced on November 20th. The attack was most successful, the enemy being completely surprised. During the advance "C" Company, being met by close fire from a German field battery, worked round its flank, and, charging with the bayonet, captured it complete.

On November 30th, the enemy launched his counter-attack towards Gouzeaucourt, in the neighbourhood of which village were situated the Battalion transport

Digitized by Google

lines. Captain and Quartermaster J. P. Shea, M.C., D.C.M., observed that the enemy was advancing, and that our own troops appeared to be retiring in disorder. He immediately dispatched the transport to a place of safety, collected every available man and led them forward to an important ridge, which he held until relieved by a brigade of the Guards Division. He fell while fearlessly exposing himself in pointing out the position to the relieving troops.

The Great German Offensive.

On March 1st, 1918, the Battalion, now in the Third Army, moved into the line at Morchies, and was holding the outpost zone of this sector when, at 5 a.m. on March 21st, the Germans began their great offensive. At this hour a heavy gas bombardment was opened on the battalion trenches and the surrounding area. By 9 a.m. the enemy had captured the observation line, which had suffered extremely heavy casualties in the bombardment, and was trying to advance towards the reserve or main outpost line of resistance. This line was gallantly held till 7 p.m. against far superior forces. At 3 p.m. orders were received to carry out a general retirement to the Corps line in rear, but, owing to the battalions on either flank having been driven back, the enemy's machine guns were then on three sides of the Battalion, and a retirement could not be carried out till dusk. This was only just in time, as at any moment the remnants of the Battalion were in danger of being surrounded. The remnants of the Brigade held the Corps line until the following night, when they were relieved.

Out of 30 officers and 639 other ranks who were in the trenches on the night of March 20th and 21st, on the night of the 22nd only 2 officers and 58 other ranks had succeeded in reaching the Corps line, the whole of the remainder being killed, wounded or captured. Of the Brigade itself, its Commander wrote : "*. . . . out of* 1,600 *men of all ranks who went into action on the morning of the* 21st, 80 *men came out on*

Digitized by Google

the morning of the 23rd, retaining their discipline to the last." Thus the enemy's desperate and costly bid for a decisive victory had been frustrated. On March 24th the Battalion returned to the Ypres area, and again experienced the vicissitudes of trench warfare. A most successful attack was made by the Battalion in July near Dickebush, and 300 prisoners were taken. Another successful attack was made near Mount Kemmel in August.

Hindenburg Line, 1918.

On September 1st the Battalion moved south again to the neighbourhood of Albert, and on the 13th moved to the St. Quentin front and became part of the Fourth Army. The final offensive, which was to win the war, had commenced. On September 19th the Battalion, at that time the extreme right battalion of the British Army, took part in the breaking of the Hindenburg Line. Owing to the French failure to advance, and thus exposing our flank, the attack made by the Battalion through the village of Holmon was driven back, and the village was not finally captured by the Battalion until the night of the 19th. The Battalion lost 10 officers and 300 other ranks in this engagement. On the early morning of September 24th an attempt was made just before dawn to capture the village of Selency. Much reduced in strength, and organized in three companies, the Battalion, after desperate fighting, was unable to capture the position, losing 7 officers and 230 men. Only 3 officers and 90 men remained, and the Battalion was organized as one company until brought up to strength again later.

Battle of the Selle, 1918.

In October the 2nd Battalion found itself in the front line between Bohain and Vaux-Andigny. On the morning of the 17th began the attack of the 1st and 6th Divisions, from Vaux-Andigny, on the German position east of the Selle River. The task of the 18th Brigade, including the Battalion, was not an easy one. Throughout the 16th the enemy had poured

Digitized by Google

gas shells into and around Vaux-Andigny, causing many casualties among our troops forming up for the attack. On the following morning the attack began in a dense fog, and it became extremely difficult to keep direction, particularly on account of the complicated fan-shaped formation of the attack. Next, the Brigade came up against uncut wire, which caused it to fall behind its artillery barrage at the outset. However, the attack was successful, and the 1st Division passing through the 6th, the latter was withdrawn from the line to the neighbourhood of Bohain for a day or two.

The 2nd Battalion was next conveyed by bus northward in relief of American troops, and on October 23rd, fought its last action of the war, this time attacking enemy positions in front of the Canal de la Sambre. After crossing a gas filled valley and fighting its way steadily forward, the Battalion reached its objective and pushed patrols down to the canal bank.

Crossing the Frontier.

On November 11th the Armistice was signed, and, on the 14th, the historic march of 243 miles into Germany commenced. On December 15th the frontier was crossed with colours flying to the strains of the Regimental march.

The 2nd Battalion finally halted near Cologne, where it formed part of the Army of Occupation until the end of April, 1919.

The following battle honours were awarded to the Regiment, and those in block capitals are emblazoned on the King's Colour :—

"AISNE, 1914, '18," "*Armentières*, 1914," "YPRES, 1915, '17, '18," "*Gravenstafel*," "*St. Julien*," "*Frezenberg*," "*Bellewaarde*," "HOOGE, 1915," "LOOS," "SOMME, 1916, '18," "*Albert*, 1916, '18," "*Bazentin*," "*Delville Wood*," "*Pozières*," "*Guillemont*," "*Flers-Courcelette*," "*Morval*," "*Le Transloy*," "*Ancre Heights*," "ARRAS, 1917, '18," "*Scarpe*, 1917," "*Arleux*," "*Hill* 70," "MESSINES.

Digitized by Google

1917," "*Pilckem*," "*Langemarck*, 1917," "*Menin Road*," "*Polygon Wood*," "*Broodseinde*," "*Passchendaele*," "*Cambrai*, 1917, '18," "*St. Quentin*," "*Rosières*," "LYS," "*Estaires*," "*Hazebrouck*," "*Bailleul*," "*Kemmel*," "*Scherpenberg*," "*Marne*, 1918," "*Tardenois*," "*Bapaume*, 1918," "HINDENBURG LINE," "*Havrincourt*," "*Épéhy*," "*Canal du Nord*," "*St. Quentin Canal*," "*Beaurevoir*," "*Courtrai*," "*Selle*," "SAMBRE," "*France and Flanders*, 1914-18." "*Piave*," "*Vittorio Veneto*," "*Italy*, 1917-18." "*Macedonia*, 1916-18." "*Egypt*, 1915-16." "*N.W. Frontier, India*, 1915, 1916-17." "*Archangel*, 1918-19."

Punjab Rebellion, 1919.

In 1919 the widespread unrest throughout Northern India—a legacy of the Great War—came to a head, and serious riots broke out in the Punjab. The work of suppressing this rebellion, which was shared by the 1st Battalion, saved the British position in India, a position which may well be compared with the Indian Mutiny of 1857, when the firm action of British troops in the Punjab had alone saved India from anarchy.

The Third Afghan War, 1919.

In May, 1919, the Amir of Afghanistan, Habibullah Khan, a firm friend of the English, who had remained impervious to German, Russian, Pan Islam and Sikh Gadhr intrigue throughout the four years of the Great War, fell at the hand of an assassin.

He was succeeded by Amir Amanullah Khan, who did not share his predecessor's friendship for the English, and believing that India would flare up in rebellion against us, declared war and marched across the frontier. Shortage of troops, transport, and general war-weariness, forbade us to do anything more than drive him back across the border. This,

Digitized by Google

however, was easily accomplished in a few weeks. The Regiment took part in the advance through the Khyber Pass, and reached Ali Musjid, where the Afghan Army had suffered defeat at our hands forty years earlier, with little opposition. The advance was continued to Dakka, but the Afghans were allowed to retire without being followed farther into their own country. "AFGHANISTAN, 1919" was added to the Regimental Colour.

1919-20. For the next two years the Regiment served in the various armies of occupation during the time that Europe and Asia Minor were being re-adjusted in accordance with the Peace Treaties. The 1st Battalion served on the Rhine and in Upper Silesia and Hungary, the 2nd Battalion at Batoum on the Black Sea and in Anatolia, whence it proceeded to India.

China.

At the end of January, 1927, the 2nd Battalion left its peace station at Sialkot, in India, and joined the Shanghai Defence Force. The following month, when the Cantonese Army entered the native city of Shanghai, and the Northern Chinese Army was in retreat, the Regiment was engaged in some fighting which occurred in the defence of the British Settlement. This was the first time the Regiment had served in China.

North-West Frontier of India, 1930.

In 1930 the 2nd Battalion formed part of the garrison of Razmak in Waziristan and took part in the Waziristan Operations of that year. In May the Battalion took part in the strenuous operation which successfully effected the relief of Datta Khel, a Tochi Scout Post which was besieged by Madda Khel tribesmen. In July the Battalion was out on column for a

Digitized by Google

month settling the Mahsud country and fought in two actions with the Mahsuds who were resisting the advance to Ladha. The operations were successful but the Battalion incurred 11 casualties, including one killed and one died of wounds.

From 1926-29 the 1st Battalion served in Northern Ireland, and from 1929-33 in Alexandria.

In 1935 the 1st Battalion was organized experimentally as a Machine Gun Battalion in the 6th Infantry Brigade at Blackdown, with its entire transport mechanized, the 1st Battalion thus being the first regiment to be organized as a Machine Gun Battalion. In September, 1936, the 1st Battalion was reorganized as a rifle battalion of four Rifle Companies and Headquarter Company.

1937.

In November, 1937, the 2nd Battalion arrived home to be stationed at Woking, after eighteen years' foreign service. The Battalion had served in South Russia (Batoum), India, China and the Sudan.

The 1st Battalion in October, 1937, proceeded to Shanghai at the beginning of its foreign tour.

Digitized by Google

THE DURHAM LIGHT INFANTRY.

Regular Battalions.

1st Battalion	... ...	68th.
2nd Battalion	... ...	106th.

Militia.

3rd Battalion	... ...	(2nd Durham Militia).
4th Battalion	... ...	(1st Durham Militia).

Territorial Battalions.

5th Battalion	... ...	Stockton-on-Tees.
6th Battalion	... ...	Bishop Auckland.
*7th Battalion	... ...	Sunderland.
8th Battalion	... ...	Durham.
9th Battalion	... ...	Gateshead.

Depot ... ... Newcastle-on-Tyne.

Thirty-seven battalions of the Durham Light Infantry took part in the Great War.

* The 7th Battalion was converted into an Anti-Aircraft Battalion in 1937, and is now designated The 47th (Durham Light Infantry) Anti-Aircraft Bn., R.E.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY OF THE 14th/20th HUSSARS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY

OF THE

14th/20th HUSSARS

Printed by
GALE & POLDEN, LTD., WELLINGTON WORKS, ALDERSHOT
ALSO AT LONDON AND PORTSMOUTH
2014-C.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

HISTORY OF THE 14th KING'S HUSSARS

THE Regiment was raised on July 22nd, 1715, by Brigadier-General James Dormer in South Britain. It was then known as "Dormer's Dragoons," but was also the 14th Regiment of Dragoons, and appears to have been called by the name of its Colonel—that is, Dormer's Dragoons, Fitzroy's Dragoons, and so on up to 1776.

The changes of the name of the Regiment are as follows:—

1715 (July 22nd): Dormer's Dragoons, and taking name of the Colonel up to 1776.

1776: 14th Light Dragoons.

1798: 14th (or Duchess of York's Own) Regiment of Light Dragoons.

1830: The 14th or the King's Regiment of Light Dragoons.

1861 (August 17th): 14th (King's) Hussars. The 14th King's Hussars.

1922 (October 1st): The 14th/20th Hussars.

From the time of its raising the Regiment has taken part in the following campaigns:—

1715: The Jacobite Rebellion of Old Pretender.

1745: The Jacobite Rebellion of the Young Pretender.

1794-5: Two troops only in the French Revolution. Wars in Holland and Belgium.

1795-7: Seven troops in San Domingo.

1808-14: Peninsular War.

Digitized by Google

1814-15 : Four troops in the war with America.
1843-5 : Two squadrons on the Southern Mahratta Campaign.
1848-9 : Second Sikh War.
1857 : Persian War.
1857-9 : Indian Mutiny.
1881 : First Boer War.
1899-1902 : South African War.
1915-18 : Great War—Mesopotamia.
1918 : Persia.

The Regiment has been on active service in England, Scotland, Portugal, Spain, France, West Indies, America, Holland, Belgium, India, South Africa (twice), Mesopotamia, Persia (twice).

* * * *

The first active service of the Regiment was against the Jacobite rebels in 1715, when they were in a brigade composed of the 9th, 11th, and 13th Regiments of Dragoons, called Pitt's Horse, in the Army of General Wills.

They attacked the Jacobites at the Battle of Preston on November 12th, 1715. The force had some success in the fight on this day, and on November 14th the Jacobites surrendered. Dormer's Dragoons had 3 men and 16 horses killed, and Brigadier-General Dormer and 4 men wounded. The Regiment escorted the prisoners to Lancaster gaol.

In May, 1717, the Regiment went to Ireland and remained there for twenty-five years, being scattered in small detachments through Ireland. They returned to
1742 England in 1742, and in 1745, the Young Pretender having raised his followers there, the Regiment marched

Digitized by Google

to Scotland and joined the 13th Dragoons under Colonel Gardiner.

They were at the Battle of Prestonpans on September 21st, when the Jacobites defeated the Royal Army. Major Boules, of the 14th Dragoons, behaved most gallantly in this disaster, and received eleven wounds before being taken prisoner.

The 14th Dragoons remained in Scotland, and, after the Jacobite invasion of England had failed and they had returned to Scotland again, the Regiment joined the 10th and 13th Dragoons in General Hawley's Force, and fought in the Battle of Falkirk, where the Jacobites were again victorious. After the final defeat of the Jacobites at Culloden, the Regiment left Scotland, and in 1747 went to Ireland again, where they remained for forty-eight years.

1794 Two troops were sent to Holland in 1794 for the campaign against the French Revolutionary Armies, and fought at Boxtell, September 14th, 1794, and Tuyl, December 30th, 1794; Geldermalsen, January 5th, 1795;
1795 Bueren, January 8th, 1795; Elst, January 10th, 1795. They were incorporated into the 8th Light Dragoons. Seven troops also went to San Domingo in 1795 to fight the revolted blacks. They fought many actions, the most notable being Le Mirabelais on June 2nd, 1797.

1797 In that year they returned to England, having lost very large numbers from disease.

1798 On July 26th, 1798, the Regiment became the 14th (or Duchess of York's Own) Regiment of Light Dragoons. They got this honour for receiving and escorting the Duchess of York on her arrival in England.

Digitized by Google

The Regiment also received the Prussian Eagle as a badge, so that the black eagle crest of the Regiment dates from this event.

1808 On October 19th, 1808, the Regiment was placed under orders for the Peninsular War. Four squadrons embarked at Flushing, near Falmouth, on December 5th, and landed at Lisbon on December 23rd.

Colonel Hawker was in command of the Regiment.

1809 The Regiment remained in Lisbon until the spring, and when the British troops advanced in April it formed part of the advanced guard.

In May they were brigaded with the 16th, 20th, 3rd, and The King's German Legion, under Brigadier-General Cotton.

May 12 On May 12th three squadrons of the Regiment took part in the forcing of the passage of the Douro. Two of these were detached with 2 guns to a point 3 miles up the river from the point where the main attack was taking place. They crossed in boats and came down on the enemy in retreat.

Major Hervey, of the 14th, led the two squadrons in a charge, which went right through the enemy's rear-guard. Being unsupported, however, the squadrons had to cut their way back again, losing 12 killed, 1 missing, and 5 officers and 21 men wounded. They inflicted very considerable loss on the French, however, and received the following recognition in despatches dated May 12th, 1809:—"The passage of the Douro, and subsequent movements round the enemy's flank by Lieutenant-General Sherbrooke, with the Brigade of Guard, and, His Majesty's 29th Regiment, and the bravery of the two squadrons 14th Light Dragoons under command of Major Hervey, and led by Brigadier-

Digitized by Google

General the Hon. Charles Struart, obtained the victory which has contributed so much to the honour of the troops on this day."

The Regiment received "Douro" as a battle honour in 1837. The Army followed up the retiring French, the 14th having an action to cover the retirement of our infantry over the River Alberche on July 27th.

On July 20th came the Battle of Talavera. Here, when the battle was at a very critical stage, the advance of the 40th Regiment, and of the 14th and 16th Light Dragoons, checked the French advance, and won the battle, at a time when matters were going very hard for the British force.

The 14th received authority to wear the word "Talavera" on their guidons and appointments in 1820 in commemoration of their services in this action, and Colonel Hawker received a gold medal.

Sir A. Wellesley retreated into Portugal after this battle, owing to French concentration against him.

1810 In July, 1810, the French were besieging Ciudad Rodrigo, and their troops made forays into neighbouring villages.

On July 11th the 14th attacked a body of French infantry at Sexmiro, which received them in square. The charge failed, and Colonel Talbot (commanding the Regiment), Quartermaster McCormick, and 11 men were killed and 23 wounded close up to the French square, which rejoined its own troops. On July 24th they took part in the action of the Coa against the advancing French. They only lost slightly, and General Crauford, who commanded the force, reported in very complimentary terms on their action. The Regiment formed part of the rearguard in the retirement behind

Digitized by Google

the lines of Torres Vedras, having engagements with the enemy at Frexadas on August 20th; Mortagao on September 24th, when one squadron of the Regiment took part in a successful charge on a superior force of French cavalry; also at the heights of Busaco on September 26th.

They were present at the Battle of Busaco, but in reserve, and then covered the retreat behind Torres Vedras, having a sharp skirmish at Mondego on October 1st, and at Rio Mandevilla on October 4th, 5th, 8th, and 9th, losing in all 27 men and 14 horses. They also had an action at Sobral on November 15th, and this ended the fighting for the year.

1811 When the French retreat began in March, 1811, Wellington followed them at once, the 14th being in the advanced guard. They made a successful charge at Venta de Serra on March 8th, and were also engaged at Pombal (March 10th), Redinha (March 12th), Casal Nova (March 14th), Fon d'Aronce (March 15th), at the Battle of Sabugal (April 3rd), and at Miranda de Colvo and Tay d'Aortos.

The French retreat ceased on reaching Salamanca, and in May they advanced again, the British falling back covered by the cavalry. The 14th were engaged at Poço Velho and Gallegos on May 3rd, and on May 5th took part in the Battle of Fuentes d'Onor. In this battle the French cavalry were much stronger than the British. During the fight the advance of the French cavalry cut off a battery of horse artillery under Ramsay, which, however, broke through the French and galloped back to our own troops. The pursuing French cavalry were charged by a squadron of the 14th Light Dragoons under Captain Brotherton and repulsed. The strength

Digitized by Google

of the French cavalry, however, obliged the British to retire behind the infantry squares, and part of the 2nd Division had to drop back to a new position. This move was covered by the 14th Light Dragoons and the Royals, under heavy artillery fire. During this movement Captain Knipe, of the 14th Light Dragoons, led his squadron in a charge against some French artillery. The charge was repulsed and Captain Knipe was killed. In this battle the 14th lost Captain Knipe and 4 men killed, 6 officers and 41 other ranks wounded, and 3 men missing, and 33 horses.

The Regiment received the battle honour " Fuentes d'Onor " in 1820.

The 14th and Royals were next employed together on outpost duty on the Agueda ; and, on the advance of the French under Marmont in June, they covered the retreat of the Light Division, twice defeating the attempts of the French cavalry under General Montbrun to outflank them.

This action was reported on most favourably by Lieutenant-General Sir Brent Spencer, who commanded the forces in Wellington's absence. They were occupied with the rest of the army in the blockade of Ciudad Rodrigo in September, 1811. On September 25th one squadron of the 14th and two of the 16th successfully charged and drove back the French Lancers of Berg at Carpio. A few days later occurred a memorable charge by the Regiment at Espeja. A body of the enemy's cavalry known as " The Polish Lancers " were drawn up on some rising ground.

Count Arentschild, who commanded the Brigade, which consisted of the 14th, 16th, and German Hussars, asked Colonel Hervey to charge them. Two squadrons

Digitized by Google

of the 14th advanced, and the Lancers awaited them with lances advanced. The 14th charged, broke them, and sabred more than sixty.

It was during one of the fights here that a French officer rode at Colonel Hervey, and in the act of striking saw that he had only one arm, and so dropped his sword to the salute and passed on.

1812 During January, February, and March and part of April the 14th were employed with the troops covering the sieges of Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz.

They were engaged on April 11th and 12th in skirmishes with French cavalry, and on the night of the 12th Lieutenant Pellew and a party of the 14th captured a picquet of twenty-two French Dragoons.

The advance towards Salamanca followed in June, the 14th being advanced guard to Sir T. Graham's column. Marmont, with a larger army, began offensive operations in the middle of July and obliged Wellington to retire. This retirement being covered by the cavalry, the 14th having some sharp skirmishes at Rueda and Alaijos ; and on July 18th a severe action was fought at Castrillos, when the Brigade, consisting of the 14th and the 1st Hussars of the German Legion, charged the French cavalry and followed it up with a successful charge on the infantry. This was followed by an attack on the French infantry by the 27th and 30th Regiments and Portuguese, which broke them, and the 14th and German Hussars got into them as they retreated, sabreing a number and taking prisoners.

The 14th lost in this action 18 men and 20 horses killed, and 3 officers, 34 men, and 18 horses wounded.

On July 19th, 20th, and 21st the Regiment was

Digitized by Google

skirmishing with the enemy cavalry, and on July 22nd came the Battle of Salamanca.

At the start of the battle the 14th and 1st German Hussars, acting as advanced guard to the 3rd Division, began the day by skirmishing with the French outposts. Later they co-operated with the 3rd Division in the attack on the French left, the repulse of which had a decisive result in making Salamanca a British victory. They only had slight losses and continued to pursue the French next day, taking several prisoners in an action at Penaranda.

Three days later, on July 26th, Corporal Hanley, of the 14th, in command of a patrol consisting of 3 men of the 14th and 4 German Hussars, captured a party consisting of 2 officers and 30 other ranks, with some baggage, for which he received a special medal in commemoration of his gallant conduct. This medal is described in Tancred's "Historical Record of Medals," and is still in existence.

Wellington advanced on Madrid in August, but was forced to retire again in October, the 14th being in the rearguard and constantly engaged. At Mantilla, on November 16th, they successfully charged the French Lancers, and next day were occupied in holding off the French cavalry, who attacked the Light Division.

18 In May, 1813, the Allies (British, Spanish, and Portuguese) again advanced. The 14th and 1st German Hussars were again in the advanced guard. They drove the French from Salamanca on May 26th with a loss of 200 killed and wounded and 200 prisoners.

On June 12th they fought in the action of Burgos, Captain Milles with his squadron capturing several prisoners and a gun. On the 15th they crossed the

Digitized by Google

Ebro, and took part in the Battle of Vittoria on June 21st which was the decisive battle of the war in the Peninsula.

The 14th were attached to Lieutenant-General Sir R. Hill's command, which attacked the enemy's left. The 14th were used first of all to support the infantry attacks, and later to help the successful turning movements against the French left.

By 6 p.m. the victory was won, and the 14th started in pursuit at once, passing all the French baggage on the way. They struck the French rearguard, which was charged by Captain Brotherton and a tumbril captured. The French retreat went through the Pyrenees by the pass of Roncesvalles, and the 14th, following them up, captured bodies of prisoners in France itself.

The Regiment received the battle honour "Vittoria" in 1820. The 14th were engaged at Almandoz on July 4th, and continuously from that day to the 7th in the valley of the Bastan, and again in the actions in Maya Pass on the 25th and 26th, when the French, who were reorganized and now commanded by Marshal Soult, advanced and forced the allies to retire.

On July 30th and August 1st and 2nd they had continual fighting, and the French were repulsed.

On October 8th Wellington crossed the Bidassoa and entered France, the 14th, who were attached to Hill's Division, entering France on November 10th, the day the River Nivelle was forced. On the same day the regimental baggage was captured by the French, and all regimental documents and papers were lost, so that many interesting and valuable records can never be replaced. The Troop Sergeant-Major of the 14th Light Dragoons who was with the baggage put up a most gallant fight to save it, and was killed in the action.

Digitized by Google

The 14th were now brigaded with the 13th Light Dragoons under Brigadier-General Vivian, and during this time got the name of the "Ragged Brigade," due to their appearance after so long in the field.

It is from the records of the 13th Hussars that a good deal of the history of the 14th has been collected, owing to loss of the latter, as has been described above.

They took part together in the Battle of the Nive on December 9th, but were not used except as support to the infantry owing to the enclosed nature of the country. On December 11th one squadron of the 14th captured a convoy, and on the 13th drove the French from Hasparren. This ended the fighting for the year.

1814 Operations began again in February. They were present at the action of Garris on February 15th, Sauveterre on the 17th, at the Battle of Orthes on February 27th, where the 14th operated against the enemy's left and carried out the pursuit next day, capturing a number of prisoners.

Sergeant Vernor, Private Cray, and Private Rose distinguished themselves in this battle.

The 14th were engaged at Aire (March 2nd), Clarac (March 14th), Castel Paget (March 16th), on the Lembege road (March 18th), Vic de Bigorre (March 19th), and Tarbes (March 20th).

On April 10th came the Battle of Toulouse, the 14th being in Fane's Brigade, among the troops under Sir R. Hill. They took part in the battle, but have never received the battle honour. They gained a great reputation in the Peninsula for their *esprit de corps*, and the way they carried out duties of patrols and vedettes.

Digitized by Google

The 14th Light Dragoons marched from the south of France to Calais, and crossed to England in July, 1814, and were received by the Duke of York on July 21st at Hounslow.

In August they were off on service again, this time to America, and took part in the first and second attacks on New Orleans. In the second attempt a boatload of 14th Light Dragoons, consisting of an officer and 37 men, fell into the hands of the enemy. The Regiment
1815 returned from America in 1815, and went to Ireland at the end of the year, returning to England in June, 1819. On April 6th, 1815, they had received permission to wear the word "Peninsula" on their guidons and appointments, and on January 17th, 1820, they got
1820 the battle honours "Talavera," "Fuentes d'Onor," "Salamanca," "Vittoria," and "Orthes."

1825 The Regiment went to Ireland again in 1825, and
1828 returned to England in 1828. On July 26th, 1830, they
1830 were received by King William IV in Hyde Park, and by his command the name of the Regiment was changed from "The Duchess of York's Own Regiment of Light Dragoons" to "The 14th" or "The King's Regiment of Light Dragoons."

1831 The Regiment was employed in keeping order in the severe riots in Bristol in 1831, from October 29th to 31st.

1833 They went to Ireland again in 1833, and Scotland
1836 in 1836.

1837 In 1837 on July 22nd the Regiment received the battle honour "Douro," twenty-eight years after the event.

1838 They returned to England in 1838, and finally left
1841 for India in 1841 and went to Kirkee.

1843 In 1843 two squadrons went on service in the Southern

Digitized by Google

Mahratta Campaign, returning to the Regiment in 1845. They were present at the investment and capture of Panulla and Powrghur.

The Regiment left Kirkee at the end of the year, and marched through Agra to Umballa, where they remained two years, and then marched to Ferozepore and Lahore.

1848 One squadron went on field service on June 1st, across the Ravee to operate against the Bahre Maharajah and his adherents, and returned on the 7th. The success of this detachment was spoken of very highly by the Commander-in-Chief.

Then the second Sikh war broke out, and the Regiment took the field with Gough's Army of the Punjaub, and on November 22nd, 1848, they had their first engagement with the enemy at the Battle of Ramnuggar, a battle with which the name of the 14th will always be associated. The description is shortly as follows:—

"It was between one and two o'clock in the afternoon. The Sikh cavalry had crossed the Chenab in large masses, and General Gough sent to Colonel Havelock to charge them.

"The Colonel led off with two squadrons in column of troops, being exposed the whole way to the fire of the Sikh guns on the banks of the river.

"The Regiment had to negotiate a steep bank, then a nullah, which was partially dry, and then through some boggy ground, through which they made their way with some difficulty, met the Sikh Gorchurras (Irregular Cavalry) on the other side, and drove them back into the river, sabreing hundreds.

"There were numerous dry channels along the bed of the river, and now these were seen to be full of large bodies of infantry who had crossed.

Digitized by Google

"Havelock retired his men a little, reformed, the third squadron being now up as well as a considerable body of the 5th Light Cavalry, and advanced on the Sikh Army and though they met a murderous fire from batteries from both sides, they charged into the centre of the Sikhs, driving them back to the river.

"The 14th and 5th Light Cavalry extricated themselves after a desperate mêlée with a loss of 44 men and 50 horses to the 14th, including Colonel Havelock killed, and 30 men and 40 horses of the 5th Light Cavalry."

The memory of this action "Ramnuggar," is celebrated each year on November 22nd, and the Ramnuggar Cup, presented by the 5th Light Cavalry, in memory of the charge, is circulated.

The Regiment were next engaged on December 3rd after the action at Sadulabore, when they and the 9th Lancers pushed across the river and followed up the retreating Sikhs.

1849 Jan. 14 Then came the Battle of Chillianwallah, an indecisive victory for the British. In this battle occurred the inexplicable retirement of Pope's Cavalry Brigade, in which the Regiment was involved. They lost 17 men and 8 horses.

On February 21st the Regiment took part in the Battle of Goojerat, when the Sikhs were finally defeated.

The Regiment were first occupied in holding off the Afghan Horse, who were attacking our right, and later in the pursuit of the routed Sikhs. In the pursuit Corporal Pain captured a Sikh Standard, cutting down the horseman who bore it.

The Regiment received special notice in despatches from Brigadier - General Kearsey, Major - General

Digitized by Google

Thackwell, and in General Lord Gough's despatches. They lost 1 officer killed and 2 officers and 4 men wounded.

The Regiment were sent off with the force under Sir W. Gilbert in pursuit across the Jhelum, and occupied the frontier of the Punjaub up to the passes of Afghanistan in spite of the most inclement weather.

They were present at the surrender of Sikhs at Rawal Pindi on March 12th, the capture of Attock (March 17th). They finally camped at Jamrood on April 2nd. The campaign closed the annexation of the Punjaub and the Regiment returned to Lahore.

They were granted the battle honours :—" Punjaub."
1852 " Chillianwallah," and " Goojerat " on December 14th, 1852.

1857 In 1857 the Regiment. went to the war in Persia. " H " Troop took part in the capture of Mohamra, and were the only part of the Regiment which came into action. They returned to Kirkee in May, and almost at once the Indian Mutiny broke out.

The left wing of the Regiment went to Ahmednagar and Nusseerabad, and the right to the Deccan.

Taking the left wing first, five troops joined General Woodburn's column, and quelled the Aurungabad Mutiny.

Then Captain Gall of the 14th, taking his squadron, and certain other troops, marched to Boldana, and arrested mutineers there. Then the left wing joined a column under Major Follett for the relief of Mhow. They had an unhealthy march through the jungles, crossed the Nerbudda by swimming, and entered Mhow on July 31st.

The column was now named the Malwa Field Force, and put under Brigadier C. S. Stuart.

Digitized by Google

1857 This column first attacked Dhar. An action took place outside the town, in which part of the 14th and the Nizam's Cavalry charged a body of mutineers, killing 40.

Captain Gall and Cornet Giles led a small party of 14th against a rebel battery, and in conjunction with 25 native infantry captured three 9-lb. guns. In a mêlée in this action Troop Sergeant-Major Grainger cut down two rebels, receiving a spear wound himself. Also Sergeant Gardiner with a small party attacked and dispersed a party in the bush. The rebels were driven into the fort of Dhar, which was taken on October 31st.

The force then marched to Mundesor. Here the rebels advanced to the attack, and Lieutenant Dew of the 14th, with 20 men charged and cut up 300 of their foot, who had crossed a river. In this affair Lieutenant Dew, Regimental Sergeant-Major Clark, and Private Buchanan distinguished themselves.

On November 22nd the 14th and the Light Cavalry attacked and cut up a body of mutineers making for Peeplia. Next day came the Battle of Goraria.

In the middle of the battle Lieutenant Martin, with 19 men, charged and captured a rebel battery of 5 guns. He was counter-attacked and driven off, when Captain Gall came up with a squadron. The 5 guns were re-taken and 200 rebel infantry cut down.

In another part of the field the 14th and Hyderabad Horse charged and broke the rebel cavalry. In the pursuit which followed Lieutenant Redmayne, who was leading, was killed.

Goraria fell on November 25th, and on December 14th the force took Indore. On December 17th the Central India Force was formed under Major-General Sir Hugh Rose, K.C.B.

Digitized by Google

Meantime the right wing of the Regiment had dealt with the rebels at Sehore. For a short time they formed part of the Nerbudda Field Force under Brigadier Charles Stuart. On December 17th they joined the Central India Force, being in the 2nd Brigade.

1858 The year 1858 was full of fighting for the Regiment; already they had been conspicuous by their services, as is shown in the letter from Colonel Durand to Lord Canning at the end of 1857. He writes:—"Much of the success in the quelling of this insurrection is due to the judicious daring, the thorough gallantry with which, whenever opportunity offered, Major Gall, his officers and men sought close conflict with the enemy, a bold one who often fought most desperately.

"I feel it a duty to Major Gall and Her Majesty's 14th Light Dragoons, men and officers, thus especially to beg your Lordship's influence in favour of officers and men who have merited by conspicuous valour everything that Her Majesty's Government may be pleased to confer. They deserve most highly."

The Central India Field Force took the field on January 6th. They first attacked Rathgur Fort. A force of rebels advanced to its relief, but were attacked by the cavalry, and fled so quickly that few were caught. Later this force of rebels was reinforced, and took up a position at Barodia, being there attacked and dispersed in a fight, in which three troops of the 14th took part.

Saugor, in which were a number of ladies, was relieved on February 3rd. The fort of Garrakota was attacked and taken on the 13th, two troops of the 14th taking part in the pursuit, and caught the rebels at

Digitized by Google

the Bias River, which they crossed, and cut down a large number, Captain Need killing 5 himself.

In the forcing of the Muddenpore Pass, which was on March 4th, Major Scudamore with a detachment containing a squadron of the 14th, made a feint attack on the Malthone Pass, while the rest of the force attacked and got through at Muddenpore. The Regiment were in the pursuit which followed to Saralic.

Meantime, the left wing of the Regiment, under Major Gall, which was with the 1st Brigade, took part in the successful action of Chanderi, and on March 22nd joined the rest of the Regiment at Jhansi, covering 70 miles in two days to do so.

In the Siege of Jhansi, which lasted for 17 days, the cavalry were distributed in seven flying camps round the town to keep the rebels from getting in or out. The duties were most arduous and no one had their clothes off during the whole period.

The siege began on March 22nd. Then Tantia Topee, the agent of Nana Sahib, one of the rebel leaders, advanced with 22,000 men and 28 guns to the relief. Sir Hugh Rose was only able to detach 1,500 men, of which 500 were British, from the besieging force to meet this army. With it was one squadron of the 14th under Captain Prettejohn, and a troop under Captain Need.

At the Battle of the Betwa this force met Tantia Topee's Army on April 1st, and utterly routed it, over 1,500 rebels being killed. The detachments of the 14th Hussars carried out a succession of charges, and pursued the enemy to the River Betwa, two troops pushing over the river, and carrying out the pursuit beyond it.

Digitized by Google

During this battle a large detachment of rebels attempted to work round and get to Jhansi.

The 1st Brigade defeated this attempt, and Lieutenant Giles of the 14th, with about 40 men, cut up many rebels in the pursuit which followed. Lieutenant Leith, of the 14th, won the Victoria Cross in this battle for saving the life of Captain Need. Sergeant Gardiner was recommended for distinguished conduct. The 14th lost 5 killed and 25 wounded in the battle, and 27 horses. Jhansi was stormed on April 3rd, and on that and subsequent days the 14th were employed in "sweeping up" rebels in and around the city.

Major Gall now became Lieutenant-Colonel, and got command of a column of which 3 troops of the 14th formed part. He attacked and took Lohari Fort on May 5th.

The Central India Force then marched on Koonch, and met the rebels on May 7th. The action was over in an hour. Two troops of the 14th under Captains Thompson and Gordon took part in the flank attack which broke the rebels, Gordon's troop charging into and breaking up the mass of the enemy, for which he was specially mentioned in Sir Hugh Rose's despatch.

The enemy retreated on Calpee. Owing to the awful heat the infantry could not pursue, but the cavalry and artillery did so, and in this pursuit three troops of the 14th, under Captains MacMahon and Blyth, cut up the rebel rearguard.

Captain Blyth also charged and captured a rebel gun and Captain Prettejohn, by Sir Hugh Rose's order, led his troop against an enfilading line of rebel skirmishers. The pursuit was continued for 7 miles.

Digitized by Google

The 14th had 5 killed and 1 officer and 17 men wounded, and 13 horses killed. They lost also 2 officers and 16 men from sun, and next day 150 men of the 14th alone were under treatment for wounds and sun.

The march on Calpee was continued, and on May 16th one troop of the Regiment took part in the action of Gowlowlee, when the mutineers attacked the rear-guard of the column. On the 17th the Regiment had to turn out and drive off the rebels near Muttra.

They took part in the action of Gowlowlee on May 22nd, an action fought in the worst possible conditions of sun. So many Europeans, in fact, were struck down that it made the whole situation extremely precarious. To show what the sun meant at this time, out of 33 men of the 14th who went out foraging only 19 returned in their saddles, the sun knocked out the rest.

Calpee fell on May 23rd, and the enemy fled pursued by Lieutenant-Colonel Gall with all available men of the 14th, Horse Artillery, and Hyderabad Cavalry for over 8 miles. All their guns were taken and large numbers killed as the cavalry made several charges. Captain Need, Lieutenants Giles, Surgeon Stewart, Acting Regimental Sergeant-Major Clark, and Private Winton were all specially mentioned.

The Central India Force was now directed on Gwalior, where the rebel leaders, Rao Sahib and Tantia Topee, and the Rani of Jhansi were reported to be. The enemy attempted to stand at Morar, but were driven through the cantonments, a detachment of the 14th under Captain Thompson, and one troop under Lieutenant Gowan getting among the rebels, and cutting up a large number.

They took part in the capture of Gwalior on June

Digitized by Google

20th. One troop of the Regiment, under Captain Prettejohn, was detached to join Brigadier-General Napier's column, which went in pursuit of the enemy, who had retreated from Gwalior. They caught and routed them at the action of Jowra Alipore.

After this date the Regiment was split up in squadrons among different columns, and employed in hunting down rebels.

During these operations Captain Thompson's squadron took part in the action at Garotha, on September 23rd, and Captain Prettejohn's at Ranode on December 17th, in which action he charged through the rebels and carried out an 18 miles pursuit.

Captains Prettejohn, Need, and Todd, Lieutenant Giles, Regimental Sergeant-Major Clark, and Corporal Best are all mentioned for gallantry in this action.

The Regiment lost in this action 1 officer, 13 men, and 20 horses.

There were no more regular engagements after Ranode, but for some four or five months the Regiment was engaged in rebel hunting in the jungles.

Among the rewards issued for services in the Mutiny, Regimental Sergeant-Major Clark received the medal for "Gallant Conduct in the Field."

1859 On January 21st, 1859, the Regiment received the battle honour "Persia."

1860 **1862** In February, 1860, the Regiment left India, after orders had once been countermanded, and went to Ireland until 1862, when they came to England.

1863 On September 3rd, 1863, the Regiment received the battle honour "Central India."

1867 They went to Scotland in 1867.

1868 Ireland again in 1868.

Digitized by Google

1869 In 1869 the squadron system was introduced, and done away with again after a year's trial.

1874 In 1874 the Regiment went to England again, and
1876 on January 4th, 1876, embarked at Portsmouth for India, and went to Bangalore.

1878 They had the disappointment of being ordered to the Afghan War and having the orders cancelled, but went
1881 to the first Boer War in 1881, going to Natal.

But by the time the Regiment had arrived, we had been defeated at Majuba Hill, and after a stay of some eight months the Regiment returned to India, going to Secunderabad.

In the manœuvres of that year the Regiment was particularly complimented by General Sir F. S. Roberts, Commander-in-Chief of the Madras Army on their scouting.

1886 In 1886 the Regiment returned to England again.

1892 On April 1st, 1892, the squadron organization was finally adopted as it is at the present.

1894 In 1894 the Regiment went to Ireland, and was there
1899 when the South African War broke out in 1899.

They were ordered to the seat of war at once, this was countermanded, owing to an outbreak of pink-eye, and they finally went, "H.Q.," "A," and "C" Squadrons on December 13th, and "B" on December 21st.

1900 "H.Q.," "A," and "C" went to Natal, and went through the Relief of Ladysmith. Two troops were at the Battle of Spion Kop, and the Regiment took part in the Battles of Vaal Krantz and Pieter's Hill, and entered the town with the relieving force. They were then brought round by sea and train to Bethulie Bridge, and marched to Bloemfontein, where they formed part of the 4th Cavalry Brigade, consisting of the 14th,

Digitized by Google

8th Hussars, 7th Dragoon Guards, and "O" Battery, Royal Horse Artillery, under General Dickson in General French's Cavalry Division.

"B" Squadron disembarked at Capetown, and joined the force for the Relief of Kimberley. They took part in the march on, and relief of, the town, the action of Dronfield, the surrender of Cronje's Army at Paardeberg, the Battles of Poplar Grove and Driefontein, and the capture of Bloemfontein. They joined the rest of the Regiment at Donker's Hoek north of Bloemfontein.

On April 21st the Cavalry Division went off for the Relief of Wepener, and fought the actions of Leuwkop, Paardekraal, and Roodekop. The latter fight though short was very fierce while it lasted, and the Regiment lost Captain Denny (King's Dragoon Guards, attached to 14th Hussars), and 2 men killed, and 9 wounded.

The Boers raised the Siege of Wepener, and the cavalry marched to Thabanchu, having several days' fighting while there, especially on the 28th.

On May 1st they took part in the Battle of Houtnek, and a few days later marched back to Donker's Hoek.

Two days' rest only were given, as the army, under Lord Roberts, had started for Kroonstad.

The cavalry followed, and took part in the Battle of Zand River on May 10th, the capture of Walsch River Drift, when they did over 50 miles in the day on May 11th, and the capture of Kroonstad on the 12th.

There was a ten-days' halt at Kroonstad, and then the army advanced on Pretoria. The Regiment took part in all actions of this march, which were the seizing of Pary's Drift and entry into the Transvaal on May 24th, the actions of Vlakfontein, May 27th, Klipriversberg, May 28th, where the Regiment headed the mounted

Digitized by Google

attack of the 4th Cavalry Brigade on a kopje which was entrenched and strongly held with wire in front, and the Battle of Dornkop, May 29th.

Here Major Brown with " C " Squadron and one troop of " B " attacked and took a kopje, the occupation of which helped the advance of the infantry later in the day. The action at Orange Grove was fought north of Johannesburg on the day the city was taken. There followed the action of Kalkheuvel, June 3rd, the fall of Pretoria, June 4th, and the Battle of Diamond Hill on June 12th, where the Regiment held an exposed hill for forty-eight hours within 350 yards of the Boers.

They were in the series of actions, July 10th to 16th, north of Pretoria, which was part of a Boer attack on our troops holding the town, and then marched east with the remainder of the cavalry, being present at the action of Waterpan, the operations by which Middelburg fell at the end of July, the Battle of Belfast, August 25th to 27th, the actions of Silverkop and Nelshoek, and the taking of Barberton on September 13th.

For the return march to Pretoria the Regiment formed part of a small column consisting of the 8th and 14th Hussars, and " M " Battery, under General Mahon. They started with a very severe action at Geluk. Here the Regiment had a very hard rearguard action to cover the withdrawal of the rest of the force to safety in the face of the determined Boer attacks.

It was in the retirement of the Regiment that Major E. D. Brown (now Colonel E. D. Browne-Synge-Hutchinson, V.C., C.B.) gained the Victoria Cross for saving the lives of an officer and three other men.

For the next seventeen days the force was practically continuously engaged with Boer commandos, having

Digitized by Google

a particularly hard fight at Bethel. The weather, too, was awful.

At Bethel, when halted there, General French rode round the regiments, and spoke in most complimentary terms to the Regiment for their conduct at the Wepener Relief, at Thabanchu, on the way to Pretoria, at the Battle of Dornkop, at Diamond Hill, and at Geluk.

The force reached Pretoria, finally, on November 3rd.

On November 21st Colonel Gilbert Hamilton got command of the 4th Cavalry Brigade, and marched to Heidelburg. For about a month they were engaged in operations against local Boer commandos, and then, owing to great Boer activity in the Magaliesberg, were brought by march route, and rail to Krugersdorf, and took part in operations against Beyers and De la Rey in the Western Transvaal, including the action of Vlakfontein on December 21st. On the 24th Second-Lieutenant Hon. H. Grosvenor went with 24 men on reconnaissance, and was attacked by very superior numbers of Boers. He had a running fight for 6 miles, and got away with the loss of 13 men killed, wounded and prisoners, and 11 horses. In this action both Grosvenor and Private Shenton were recommended for gallantry. The latter got the D.C.M.

From this date, December 24th, the Regiment was split up. "A" went to General Babington's column, "B" to General Clement's, "H.Q." and "C" and 4th Squadron (formed at Heidelburg) remained with General Gordon. This dispersion lasted with short intervals until February, 1902.

1901 "A" Squadron went through the operations in the Western Transvaal from December, 1900, until June, 1901.

They were at the action at Naauwpoort, January 5th.

Digitized by Google

The action at Hartebeestefontein, March 22nd to 24th, 1901, when De la Rey was defeated with the loss of 5 guns and his convoy, and the actions of Kaffir Kraal and Kosterfontein.

"B" Squadron rejoined "A" in General Babington's column for a few days, and took part in the action at Naauwpoort, January 5th, and with part of "A" fought an action near Ventersdorp.

They then went to Rooikraal, spent some weeks guarding the crossings of the Vaal near Venterskroon, then were employed on convoy work between Potchefstroom and Ventersdorp, having an action at Witportje, May 23rd.

They then joined "A" in Colonel Hickie's column, and both squadrons fought at Kosterfontein in June. At the end of that month they were sent by train to join the rest of the Regiment at Newcastle. Both squadrons had a very complimentary farewell letter from Colonel Hickie.

"H.Q.," "C" and 4th Squadrons, with General Gordon, were at the action of Witfontein on January 5th. They then joined Pulteney's column, and took part in the operations, under General French, towards the east. They were in the actions of Boschmans Kop, January 29th; Rolspruit, February 1st; Rooipoort, February 2nd; Klipfontein, February 12th; and the capture of Pietretief on February 16th. They went eventually to Newcastle in Natal, arriving on April 5th.

From this date onwards they were employed in guarding the Natal passes, the Regiment being split up in small detachments for the purpose. When "A" and "B" arrived they were put on the same duty,

Digitized by Google

"A" being sent to the Ladysmith district, and "B" eventually to northern Natal.

"A" Squadron had an action at Upper Tugela on September 17th, when the Boers came down the pass, and, a mixed squadron, under Captain Miller, which joined Garrett's column, fought an action at Witkopjes on December 27th in a fog. In June also of that year a troop, under Lieutenant Lace, laid in wait for and badly caught a body of Boers coming to attack Hanover Farm.

1902 In February, 1902, the Regiment got together for the first time since December, 1900, and joined De Lisle's column, in which were the King's Dragoon Guards and the 7th Dragoon Guards.

They took part in the successful drive to Harrismith, which ended on February 27th, and in the subsequent operations in the eastern Free State, ending in the Boer surrender on May 31st, 1902.

1903 They remained at Kroonstad until March, 1903, and then went to England, going on the same boat as the 20th Hussars as far as Suez.

1904 They were at Aldershot until the end of 1904, and then marched to Shorncliffe, where they remained until
1906 September, 1906, when they went to India.

1911 They remained at Bangalore until October, 1911,
1914 and then went to Mhow, and here they were when the war broke out in 1914.

The 14th were one of the three unlucky cavalry regiments retained in India for reasons of policy. They went to Meerut.

Meantime in England the Regimental Depot, of all places, were the first units of the regiment to be in action, as they were present at the bombardment of Scarborough by the German Fleet.

Digitized by Google

Several officers and numbers of men in the Regiment, however, went to the war in France, many having joined the 13th Reserve Cavalry Regiment formed at Colchester, and commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Q. M. B. Jones, late 20th Hussars, and later by Colonel E. J. Tickell, D.S.O., late 14th King's Hussars. This Regiment was moved later to Maresfield, and then Tidworth, being called the 5th Reserve Cavalry Regiment.

Meantime, the Regiment, after being kept at Meerut until late 1915, were ordered to Mesopotamia. They went straight up the river Tigris to join General Townshend's force.

1915 They were just late for the Battle of Ctesiphon, but took part in the retreat of the force on Kut, having their first action at Shidhaifash on December 1st, 1915.

The whole force arrived in Kut, and, very fortunately for the Regiment, they were ordered to break out, and did so on December 6th, and joined the force assembling to relieve Townshend at Ali el Garbi.

They went through the fighting for the Relief of Kut.

1916 At the Battle of Sheikh Saad on January 8th, Captain Bruce and his squadron carried out a reconnaissance of the Turkish position, getting within 200 yards of their trenches. For this he was thanked by General Kemball.

Then came in succession the Battles of Wadi, Hannah, and Dujailah Redoubt, after which the attempt to relieve Kut definitely failed.

On May 20th the Cavalry Brigade advanced to the Hai River. The 14th were sent forward to try to seize the bridge.

The attempt was made, but the Regiment was only

Digitized by Google

120 strong, there was no cover, and it was quite unsupported.

Captain Mewburn, who commanded the squadron, and Lieutenant Deakin were both killed.

A long period of reorganization and preparation followed, while General Maude made preparations for a further advance.

1917 In February, 1917, this began. On the 24th the cavalry crossed the Tigris, Kut fell, and the advance on Bagdad began.

The Turks retreated, leaving great amounts of material behind, but putting up a rearguard action when they could. At one of these at Lajj, Captain Astley was killed.

The Regiment, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Hewitt, struck the railway 7 miles north of Bagdad at Kazimain. This place surrendered to Colonel Hewitt, and its fall cut off the city. On March 27th the cavalry, who had advanced up the Diala River, engaged the Turks, who had advanced from Jebel Hamrin.

In the action which followed Captain Hamer was wounded.

In September was fought the action of Ramadie. This action was fought by a force under General Brooking and had as its object the capture of the Turkish force, about 5,000 strong with 12 guns, which was entrenched.

The 6th Cavalry Brigade, which consisted of the 14th Hussars, 21st and 22nd Cavalry, and "V" Battery, Royal Horse Artillery, with the 15th Machine Gun Squadron made a march round the southern flank of the Turks at Ramadie, and were astride the Aleppo road the late afternoon of September 28th, the 14th

Digitized by Google

Hussars being on the road itself. At dusk Lieutenant Moule was sent forward with a standing patrol towards Ramadie, and about 1 a.m. he reported the approach of the Turks, and later, as they came on, he retired just in front keeping them in view, and so brought them right on to the Regiment.

The advancing Turks were met with fire of all rifles, and 10 Hotchkiss guns at about 400 yards. They attempted to reply, some of them crawling forward to within 50 yards of the position.

The fighting went on until dawn, and the enemy, who lost, according to their own estimate, 600 killed and wounded, were driven back on Ramadi, and surrendered at 11 a.m. on the 29th.

Colonel Hewitt was mortally wounded at the height of the battle, and died on the evening of the 30th at Felujah. Two other officers were wounded, of which one, Lieutenant Meade, died, and there were 38 other casualties in the Regiment.

General Maude made an address to the 6th Cavalry Brigade at Chalderi, mentioning what a great loss Colonel Hewitt was to the army. The Brigadier also sent a complimentary telegram on the fight.

Lieutenant-Colonel Bridges succeeded Colonel Hewitt in command of the Regiment.

The Regiment took part in the Battle of Tekrit on
1918 November 6th, and early in 1918 marched to Persia, forming part of a force known as Bridge's column, and acting in conjunction with the operations of the Dunster Force on the Caspian Sea. For these operations the Regiment were extended over some 500 miles of country, and were in consequence very much split up.

"H.Q.," "B," and "D" marched to Hamadan and

Digitized by Google

Bijar, and while there, came the flight of the Jilus, a tribe of north Persia, which passed through the area held by these squadrons. They were obliged to cover the retreat of these unfortunate people, and had a number of encounters with the Turks and Kurds, who were following them.

"C" Squadron went to Kermanshah, Hamadan, and Kazvin. Here they came under the Russian leader Bishavakoff, and fought under his command at Menjil Bridge. Here they remained two months, and then went on to Zinjan on the main Tabriz—Kermanshah road. They then were met by a Turkish Division, and had a rearguard action for the next three days through Tikmadasht, and took part in the action at Kuflon Kuh. From here they went back to Kazvin, where "B" Squadron joined them.

"A" Squadron went to Kermanshah, and thence on to Senneh.

About December the whole Regiment concentrated at Sharaban, and shortly after returned to Bagdad.

From here the Headquarters and part of the Regiment returned to England, leaving a composite regiment of cavalry under the command of Major Ambler at Bagdad. The officers and other ranks composing this regiment rejoined the Regiment in England in the early part of
1920 1920.

The Headquarters of the Regiment took over the barracks in Tidworth from the 5th Reserve Cavalry Regiment, and remained there until December, 1920, when the Regiment went to Cologne and joined the British Army of the Rhine.

1921 In 1921, owing to the failure of the Germans to carry out the terms of the Treaty of Versailles, the Allies,

Digitized by Google

British, French, and Belgians advanced and occupied Dusseldorf. Two squadrons of the 14th Hussars formed part of this force. They remained there about three months, and on the Germans giving in returned to Cologne. Almost immediately fighting broke out in Silesia between the Poles and Germans. A mixed force of the Allies was sent, consisting of British, French, and Italians, and " A " Squadron 14th Hussars formed part of this force, and were in Silesia for a year until the terms were settled.

1922 On October 1st, 1922, the Regiment again changed its name, and became the 14th/20th Hussars on being amalgamated with the 20th Hussars. In October,
1923 1923, the 14th/20th Hussars returned to England from the Rhine.

Digitized by Google

HISTORY OF THE 20th HUSSARS

1759 THE 20th Light Dragoons were raised in 1759 from the Light Troops of several Dragoon Regiments at the time when we were engaged in the Seven Years' War as Allies with Frederick the Great of Prussia against the Austrians, Russians, and French.

1763 On the conclusion of the war, in 1763, the customary reductions of the Army took place, and the Regiment was disbanded.

1778 It was raised again in 1778 when we were at war with the revolted American Colonies, and later against a big European Coalition.

1783 It was disbanded again in 1783, when hostilities ended.

1792 In 1792 the blacks and half-castes of the West Indies rose in rebellion, and the Regiment was again raised for service there, and was called the 20th or Jamaica Light
1795 Horse. They were employed against the rebels from
1800 1795 to 1800 continuously, their service being chiefly in Jamaica.

1805 In 1805 half the Regiment was sent to the Cape of Good Hope against the Dutch ; this ended in the capture of Capetown.

They were sent from there to South America in the war against the Spaniards, leaving their horses at the Cape. They were employed therefore as infantry, and were at the fighting for Monte Video, especially at the battle at San Carlos when the town was taken.

Digitized by Google

In this action Corporal Marshall of the 20th Light Dragoons fought and killed the commander of the Spanish Cavalry. They took part in the advance on, and capture of, Monte Video, and being now remounted, distinguished themselves by their outpost and reconnaissance work. They were in South America until
1808 1807, getting back to England in 1808.

In 1805 the other wing of the Regiment went to Italy first of all, where they had some fighting, and at the end of the year went to Sicily, and in June, 1806,
1806 took part in the Battle of Maida, in which, after a hard fight, the French were defeated and pursued down to the sea by the 20th.

1807 In 1807 part of this wing went to Egypt and fought against the French at Alexandria and Rosetta.

In the fight at Rosetta Private Trembling of the 20th greatly distinguished himself by cutting his way through a Turkish patrol to take a message.

This wing was then concentrated again in Sicily, and in 1807 went home, the whole Regiment being together again for the first time for nearly three years. They were here only a very short time.

1808 In 1808 the Regiment, Headquarters, and six troops sailed from Portsmouth to Portugal for the Peninsular War.

They took part in the Battle of Rolica, but were not actively engaged, as it was an infantry battle in ground where cavalry could not act. They did, however, have a very considerable effect on the fight, as when the French advanced to attack, the 20th and two squadrons of Portuguese moved to flank of the British line, which prolonged it, and threatened the French attack in flank; this move caused the French to give up the attack and retire.

Digitized by Google

A few days later came the Battle of Vimiera.

The evening before, that is, August 20th, Sergeant Landsheet of the 20th Light Dragoons reported the French advancing from the north. He was sent in person to make his report to Sir A. Wellesley (afterwards Duke of Wellington), who complimented him on his smartness.

Aug. 21 At 8 a.m. on August 21st the battle began.

For some time it was an infantry battle, and then, as they were very hard pressed by the French attacks and the French cavalry were coming on, orders were given to Colonel Taylor, commanding the Regiment, to advance. As they moved forward with the Portuguese on both flanks, they passed Sir A. Wellesley, who called to them "Now 20th! Now's your chance."

Colonel Taylor gave the order to attack and then charge, but the Portuguese halted, and the 20th carried it through alone.

They scattered the oncoming French cavalry, and then met a body in reserve. Before this body of cavalry could get up a gallop, the 20th rode them down and dispersed them. Behind were some infantry, whom they charged and drove over a small hedge.

Here Colonel Taylor was shot through the heart.

The other side of the hedge were some French grenadiers. The 20th jumped the hedge, and, in spite of the fight put up by the French grenadiers, who shot down some of the men and horses, they killed them to a man.

The 20th still pressed on until they got into a place surrounded by high hedges, with infantry all round them. They could not get at the infantry, and were having a very hot time when the 50th Regiment arrived, drove off the French, and the 20th were able to get

Digitized by Google

clear. Their losses in this action were their Colonel (Taylor) 19 men and 30 horses killed, and 22 of all ranks and 10 horses wounded. One officer, 10 rank and file, and 1 horse were missing. The Regiment received the following notice in the despatch of the Commander-in-Chief :—

"I cannot say too much in favour of our troops, their gallantry and discipline were equally conspicuous. It is a justice to the following corps to draw your attention to it in a particular manner. The 20th Light Dragoons, which had been commanded by Colonel Taylor."

1809 The Regiment had a good deal of marching and small actions during this year and 1809, particularly on April 10th, when they surprised a party of French at night and captured several guns and some prisoners. On April 11th, also, they took part with the 16th Lancers in an action at Grigon, when the French lost 100 prisoners.

The 20th were specially mentioned by General Struart for their gallant behaviour on this occasion. It should be noted that in May they were in the Brigade with the 14th Light Dragoons with whom they are now amalgamated.

At the end of 1809 the 20th Light Dragoons went again to Sicily.

1810 In 1810 two scouts of the 20th reported the attempt of the French to cross from Italy to Sicily by night, resulting in the capture of over 1,000 prisoners and the failure of this attempt.

1812 Part of the Regiment returned to Spain in 1812, and
1813 were at the action of Vicente. In 1813 the rest of the Regiment returned. They took part in the Battle

Digitized by Google

of Castalla, and, later in the year, on September 13th, the Battle of Villa Franca.

Here the charge of French cavalry was met by the 20th, and defeated with a loss to the French of 300 officers and men, the 20th losing 42.

1814 In 1814 the Regiment again went to Italy, and took part in the capture of Genoa.

They returned to England in 1815 after ten years' almost continuous campaigning, and were quartered at Hounslow.

1819 In 1819 the Regiment was again disbanded.

Many of the men were transferred to the East India Company's Service, and a Regiment was formed of them.

1862 In 1862 the Regiment was re-raised from the British East India Company's forces, and in 1863 their name was changed from Light Dragoons to Hussars.

1863 In 1863 and 1868 they were twice mobilized and sent
1868 to the Frontier, but saw no fighting there.

1884 In 1884 2 officers and 43 non-commissioned officers and men formed part of the Light Camel Corps in Egypt for the operations against the Mahdi.

1885 In 1885 two more squadrons went to Suakin and joined the expedition.

They fought at the Battle of Hasheen. They were engaged in patrolling and in convoy escorts, in which they had several small engagements. One squadron took part in the Battle of Tofrek, where the British force was surprised by the Dervish attack.

They were on patrol, and hearing the fire came up in time to save large numbers of transport animals, and drivers, who had stampeded and were being cut up by the Dervishes. The fighting was mainly in thick bush.

Digitized by Google

1885 Three squadrons were in the Nile Frontier Campaign in 1885 and present at the Battle of Giniss, and 1 officer and 50 men pursued the defeated Dervishes to Absarat.

1888 In 1888 one squadron under Lieutenant-Colonel Fraser took part in the Battle of Gemaizeh. Thrice they charged the Dervishes after they had been driven from their trenches. In 1889 the same squadron went up the Nile and took part in the Battle of Toski, where they carried out a charge on the Dervishes and a pursuit.

1890 This last squadron did not get to England until 1890.

1895 In 1895 the Regiment went to India, and were there until the Boer War broke out. They came to South

1901 Africa in 1901, and took part in the driving operations in the Transvaal and Free State against the Boer commandos in 1901 and 1902.

1902 They were in the Harrismith drive, which ended on February 28th, 1902, and repelled the Boer attack at Sterkfontein. On April 4th, 1902, one troop was practically surrounded when rearguard to Colonel Nixon's column at Strathnairn, and fought until relieved. In this action Lance-Corporal Morwood was promoted Corporal and received the D.C.M.

The Regiment was at Heilbron when peace was declared.

1903 In 1903 they went from South Africa to Egypt, which

1904 country they left in 1904 and came to England.

1914 They were here when the Great War broke out in 1914, being in the 5th Cavalry Brigade at Colchester. They formed part of the cavalry of the British Expeditionary Force, and disembarked at Havre on August 18th.

They came into action against Germans for the first time on August 22nd, patrols of the Regiment coming in contact with German cavalry.

Digitized by Google

On the 24th they took part in the Battle of Mons, covering the retirement of the infantry, and holding successive positions to keep the Germans back. They carried out this duty with the rest of the cavalry, and in the action on the 28th took part in the action near Moy against the German cavalry, making a mounted attack on a German battery, which was, however, stopped by wire fences.

On September 5th the retreat ended, and the advance of the Allies began on September 6th, and the Regiment took part in the series of actions known as the Battle of the Marne and the pursuit of the German armies to the Aisne, which they reached on September 12th.

From September 13th to 27th they took part in the Battle of the Aisne. They were engaged on the 14th at Vailly Bridge, which they crossed under shell-fire, and on the situation being found in Vailly to be such that cavalry could not be used, they had to re-cross under very heavy shell-fire, leading in single file.

The losses were extraordinary light. From that day until the end of the battle they were only employed in detachments, and on September 28th were withdrawn and marched to Flanders, assisting in the attack on Mont des Cats on October 12th.

On October 15th they advanced to the Lys and captured Hollebeke and Houthen next day, driving the Germans in front of them.

On October 30th the Germans attacked all along the line, and, owing to the retirement of troops on their left, the Regiment had to fall back, their retirement being covered by a troop under Sergeant Bassinthwaite. The fight put up by the troop allowed the rest of the Regiment to get away, but it was attacked and

Digitized by Google

overwhelmed by the advancing Germans immediately afterwards. The Regiment finally got back and dug in about three quarters of a mile north-west of Oosttaverne. They lost this day 1 officer and 3 men killed, 1 officer and 8 wounded, and 17 missing, these being the troop which had covered the first retirement.

The 31st was quiet in this part of the line, but about 1 a.m. on November 1st the Germans attacked and took part of the entrenched line, by which they enfiladed "B" Squadron of the 20th.

About dawn on November 1st "B" Squadron joined the 12th Lancers in a counter-attack with the bayonet on Wytschaete which was completely successful, and cleared the village.

For the remainder of the first Battle of Ypres the Regiment were kept either occupying parts of the entrenched line or in reserve in what was so well known throughout the war as the Ypres Salient. The battle ended November 21st, and the Regiment went into rest billets.

They were inspected on December 2nd by His Majesty the King.

1915 They went into the trenches about Zillebeke from February 10th to 23rd, and took part in the attempt to counter-attack the trenches of the 16th Lancers, which had been blown up and captured. In this affair the Regiment had 7 men killed, and 3 officers and 3 men wounded.

Sergeant Simes of "C" Squadron received the D.C.M. for coolness and gallantry in the attack, and in getting back some of the wounded.

On March 9th they were moved up to be ready to go through the gap which the attack at Neuve Chapelle was

Digitized by Google

expected to make. The gap did not take place, and after being in reserve during the battle the Regiment was withdrawn.

On April 23rd the Regiment was moved up again on the occasion of the German gas attack. They went into the trenches north of Potijze on the 29th, and were withdrawn on May 2nd. On this day, as they were leaving, the Regiment came under gas for the first time.

They were in the trenches at Potijze again from the 14th to the 21st, and were brought up again hurriedly from rest billets on May 24th again, owing to another gas attack, returning on May 30th.

From September 21st to 29th the Regiment were brought up ready to take part in the Battle of Loos, but were not actively engaged.

Just after this Colonel Edwards got an infantry brigade, and Colonel Cook got command of the Regiment.

1916 The Regiment were in the trenches again from February 3rd to 15th, and on the night of the 13th/14th took part in the bombing affair following the explosion of some mines close to the Hairpin trench. It went on most of the night, the Regiment using 6,000 bombs. They lost an officer and 7 men killed, and 2 wounded. During the Battle of the Somme the Regiment with other cavalry was held in reserve, waiting for the gap which never appeared.

1917 The 1917 Offensive on the part of the Allies began with the Battle of Arras, and on April 9th, as good progress had been made, the cavalry were brought up close behind the infantry to a point whence they were to jump off for the break through. All the night of April 10th/11th the 5th Cavalry Brigade stood in the snow, being intermittently shelled, and were then withdrawn.

Digitized by Google

They were then put in the trenches again about Lempire from May 24th to 31st, June 7th to 14th, and June 28th to July 4th, and though brought up into the area for the third Battle of Ypres did not get near the fighting.

On November 15th they were brought down for the Battle of Cambrai.

They were brought up to Gouzeaucourt on the 20th following the successful attack, and then, as no further progress was made, were brought again back to Saulcourt, and remained ready to move at one hour's notice to support any threatened point in the line for the next few days.

On the evening of the 26th the Regiment were brought up dismounted as part of the 5th Dismounted Battalion, and took over a small re-entrant in the north part of the Bourlon Wood. They lost 1 officer killed during the relief, and 2 officers wounded, one of whom died of wounds afterwards. The trenches were heavily shelled during the 27th and 28th, and the Regiment had 29 casualties. They were relieved early in the morning of the 29th, the cavalry receiving the thanks of General Sir Julian Byng, Commanding the Third Army, for the defence of the Bourlon Wood.

The Regiment had not been out twenty-four hours when the German counter-attack on November 30th broke through our line on the southern flank of the salient caused by our advance.

Orders were on the way to the 5th Cavalry Brigade, but were anticipated by Colonel Cook, who turned the 20th out and went straight to Gouzeaucourt, without waiting for the rest of the brigade.

He found a line of Royal Engineers holding thinly a line of trenches facing the Germans, and reinforced

Digitized by Google

them, and then by orders of the Brigadier the Regiment made a dismounted advance for 1,000 yards, killing the Germans they met *en route*, and establishing themselves on the ridge at Gouzeaucourt. The 20th remained in position all night, and a gap being found on their left, Major Little collected the remnants of three companies of infantry who had lost their officers and filled the gap with them, for which he received a bar to his D.S.O.

The Regiment was relieved early next day, and for the next few days were kept close up, ready to move at half an hour's notice, and supplying digging parties for support lines or holding sections of the trenches.

A very complimentary message on the work of all ranks in the cavalry division was sent out by the commander. This ended the fighting of the 20th for the year.

1918 During the first part of 1918 the 20th were supplying parties constructing trenches and wire entanglements. On the 18th 4 officers and 150 other ranks went as part of a brigade working-party to Jussy, all being under Major Little. They were warned of the coming German offensive on March 24th, and on the 21st the attack began, Jussy being heavily shelled. The retirement began on that day, the Regiment being employed dismounted in holding off the oncoming Germans with various bodies of infantry. Major Little collected a large party of dismounted cavalry and infantry, and was about to counter-attack when the German advance came on round his left, and he was obliged to abandon the project.

The Regiment fought its way back dismounted until the evening of March 23rd, when they reached their horses.

Digitized by Google

The 20th then formed part of a small mounted force under Colonel Cook, known as "Cook's detachment," and, on the 25th, on the request of the French for support the whole of the mounted cavalry moved to near Lagny, which place the 20th and a squadron of the 16th occupied when the French withdrew.

The German advance caused a further retirement, and during this move Colonel Cook was killed and Major Little assumed command.

This detachment of the Regiment rejoined the rest of their brigade just west of Compiegne near Venette.

The other detachments of the Regiment formed part of a brigade formed from mounted detachments of different units, and was attached to the 4th Cavalry Brigade under General Pitman, and fought through the actions of March 25th and 27th during the retirement from the Noyon area.

They had severe fighting on March 26th at Hill 160, north-west of Labroye, and Hill 104 near Dive-le-Frome.

The whole Regiment were together again on March 27th near Venette.

On April 1st a dismounted company of the Regiment, under Captain Hall, took part in the attack on Rifle Wood one mile west of Domart-sur-Luce. The Regiment formed the second wave on the left wing of the attack, and though caught in enfilade and machine-gun fire, they reached their objective with the loss of 3 killed, and 3 officers and 39 other ranks wounded. The cavalry received a eulogistic message on their performance from General Rawlinson.

At the end of this fighting the Regiment was reduced to 13 officers and 150 other ranks.

Digitized by Google

On April 9th the Germans broke through the Portuguese line, and the cavalry were again held ready to intervene up to April 20th, after which the situation being quieter, they were moved back until the fighting in August began.

On the night of August 4th they moved out to the Battle of Amiens, and on the early morning of August 8th they were at Glisy ready to exploit the success of the infantry.

The Regiment was in action on the 9th, and attempts to push forward were stopped by the heavy machine-gun fire of the Germans. "C" Squadron succeeded in galloping forward some distance under fire at about 500 yards, and lost a good many horses, but the Colonel then ordered them to withdraw. Later in the day "A" and "C" Squadrons reached the Buchoir—Rouvry road, but could go no farther.

For the rest of the month the Regiment was employed in detached Squadrons, of which a troop of "C" Squadron took part in the attack by the 3rd Division on August 26th and 27th. On August 31st the Regiment was collected at Warlincourt.

On September 29th the Regiment was up again ready to exploit the expected success of the IX Corps. "C" Squadron, now only 2 officers and 40 men, were sent to the 32nd Division, and at 4 p.m. on October 1st attempted to go through the gap about Joncourt.

The leading patrol under Squadron Sergeant-Major Adams which made the attempt, however, lost, every man being hit, and it had to be abandoned. On October 3rd, while waiting at Presselles for an expected success by the 46th Division, the Regiment was shelled

Digitized by Google

with gas shells, and lost 1 officer killed, and 2 officers and 3 men badly gassed.

On October 12th the 20th were allotted as divisional cavalry to the 2nd American Corps, remaining with them until the 20th, when the 5th Cavalry Brigade was reformed and attached to the 1st British Division, and the Regiment was split up, being attached to different brigades until November 4th, on which day the Regiment was attached to the 97th Infantry Brigade and a squadron went to the 46th Division.

On November 5th "C" Squadron went through the leading infantry brigades, accompanying the 97th Infantry Brigade. They were split up to support different battalions, and one troop under Lieutenant Bland captured Favril with 2 eight-inch guns and 49 prisoners. They made a further 2-mile advance on that day, before being held up by German machine guns. On November 6th, 7th, and 9th the Regiment went ahead of the infantry, on the 9th being 5 miles ahead.

On the 10th the Regiment formed part of what was called Bethell's force, which consisted of the 5th Cavalry Brigade, and two infantry brigades, and were the advanced guard of the Fourth Army.

During the night of the 10th the Regiment was billeted within a mile of the German line. Iron rations had been consumed, and nothing could get up to Bethell's force. Next morning warning was received that the Armistice was impending, and troops were ordered to be as far forward as possible. Consequently two patrols of the 20th were actually in action when the Armistice began at 11 a.m., November 11th.

"A" Squadron similarly went through the infantry

Digitized by Google

on November 5th, 6th, 8th and 9th, came in contact with the Germans and fought all day, being relieved by the infantry at night. They rejoined regimental headquarters ten minutes before the war ended.

On November 8th patrols of "B" Squadron took part in the capture of Avesnes, and lost 1 officer mortally wounded. The Regiment was thanked by the General Officer in Command, 32nd Division, for the work done during this last part of the War.

The Regiment spent some time first at Berg Reuland in Germany, and then at Le Sart near Spa in Belgium, after which they returned to Colchester.

In the summer of 1919 they were sent to Egypt under Colonel Richardson. Then came the rising of the Turkish Nationalists, and they went to Turkey, being engaged in the fighting in Ismid during 1920.

Then came the economy era, and the 20th were disbanded, but this was only temporary.

They were re-raised, and now form the 20th Hussar Squadron of the 14th/20th Hussars.

The Regiment, as may be seen from the foregoing, has had a most varied history, and has fought in the following countries :—

West Indies, South Africa (twice in 1805 and 1901-2), South America, Italy (twice, in 1805 and 1814), Sicily (twice, in 1805 and 1810), Spain, Portugal, Egypt, Belgium, France, and Turkey.

The following are the campaigns it has fought in :—

1795 to 1800. In the West Indies.

1805. Half the Regiment to South Africa against the Dutch. Then to South America against the Spaniards. The other half to Italy against the French.

Digitized by Google

1806. To the campaign in Sicily.
1807. To the war in Egypt against the French.
1808 to 1809. Peninsular War.
1809 to 1812. To Sicily against the French.
1812 to 1814. Peninsular War.
1814. To Italy against the French.
1884 to 1890. War in Egypt against the Mahdi.
1901 to 1902. South African War.
1914 to 1918. Great War.

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY OF THE GLOUCESTERSHIRE REGIMENT

Digitized by Google

THE TWENTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT AT QUATRE BRAS.

IT is five o'clock in the afternoon on June 16th, 1815. The scene is the "tall rye field" at Quatre Bras, with which Captain Siborne has made us familiar.

Away at Ligny Blucher's men are wavering, so determined are the Veterans whom Napoleon has collected in the frontiers of Flanders. Were Ney and Kellerman to succeed in over-throwing the sturdy English soldiers, who, having marched on the Charleroi Road, have taken up a position at Quatre Bras, the whole plan of the Campaign must be altered, and the great Battle of Waterloo, whereon the Great Duke rests his hopes, can never be fought. Thus it is that a supreme effort for victory must be made.

For three long hours has the battle been fought; upon its issue hangs the fate of Europe. Night, which would bring relief, tardily delays its advent, and that "astonishing infantry," although well-nigh exhausted by the persistence of its courageous foe, and terribly lessened in numbers, must steadily stand still till the enemy retires. Upon its front the artillery plays; between its squares the cavalry rides at ease; while Ney taxes his energies and skill to the utmost in hope of discovering some weak point in its formation.

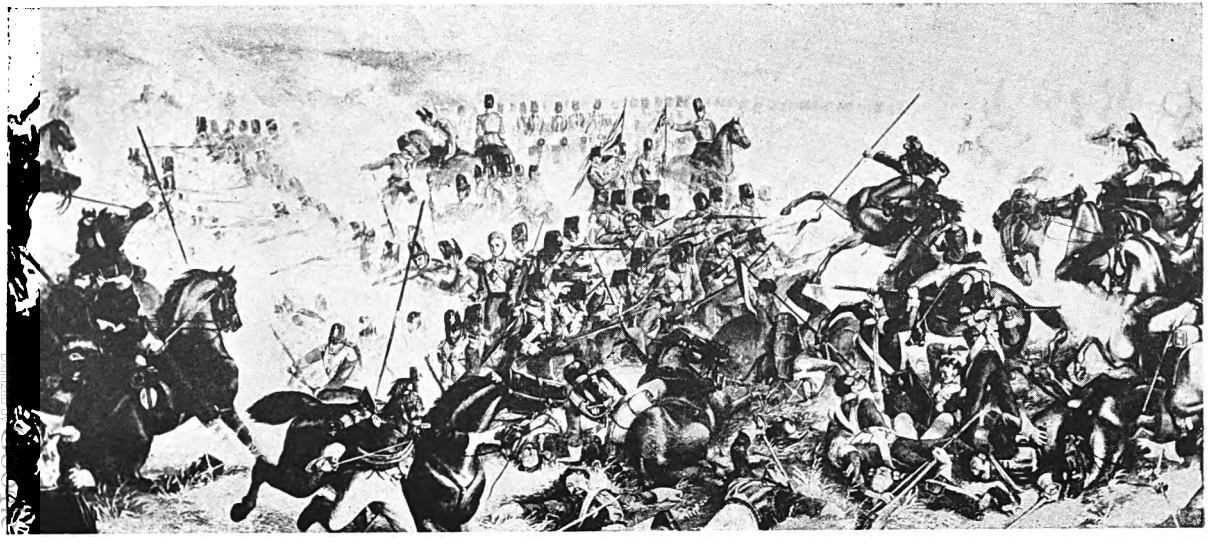
We are gazing upon the gallant Twenty-eighth as it holds the position assigned it by the leader of the 5th Division, that gallant Picton, who, when next the battle rages and his brave followers are well-nigh overwhelmed by superior numbers, will set them the grandest example of a soldier, and die in the defence of his country. You glance along the lines of the square which the Regiment has formed without discovering one fearful face; veterans with compressed lips and frowning brows; recruits, who, having recovered from their first nervous apprehension, are now carried away by the excitement of the moment, and are actually chaffing the oncoming enemy—all stand before you. The trampling of the horses' feet in former charges has beaten down the grey and golden rye, and left the scarlet uniforms of the men exposed to view; every epaulette, button, facing, stripe, firelock, and bayonet may be seen; the expression of every countenance is brought out, and the English soldier, as he awaits the last onslaught, is before you in all the majesty of his bravery. Facing the square are the Cuirassiers of terrible memory and the Polish lancers, both famous *chevau-legers* of France, who, having over and over again attempted to gain the position, are now embarked in the last grand effort. They lack not courage, nor, if opposed to troops less determined than are the Twenty-eighth, would they fail of success. But in presence of the men who stand in square on this memorable field of rye they are thwarted, and presently hurled back in confusion; already has the steady fire of the infantry taken effect. The strength of their furious charge, directed as it is against three sides of the square, is broken; in another moment the unceasing rattle of musketry will sweep away horses and riders together, and the Twenty-eighth will be troubled no more.

* * * *

Eighty years have passed since that memorable day which saw the pride of France humbled, and the first successful blow struck for the deliverance of Europe. On many a field have Englishmen faced fearful odds, standing shoulder to shoulder as did the Twenty-eighth at Quatre Bras, ready to fall where they stood rather than yield to the impulse of self-preservation. Yet never since that battle have men fought more bravely than did those upon whose forms we gaze to-day. It needed the genius of a great artist to depict such a scene—the crisis of the most momentous struggle this century has witnessed. And as in the olden time the records of great deeds done were prized by those who hoped great deeds to achieve, so Englishmen who have faith in the future will esteem as an heirloom this grand representation of the fight at Quatre Bras.

1895.

Digitized by Google



"QUATRE BRAS," JUNE 16TH, 1815.

Digitized by Google

28 61

A SHORT HISTORY

OF THE

GLOUCESTERSHIRE REGIMENT

ALDERSHOT
GALE & POLDEN, LTD., WELLINGTON WORKS
Also at LONDON and PORTSMOUTH

5410 F

Digitized by Google

BATTLE HONOURS ON "REGIMENTAL" COLOUR (34):

The Sphinx, superscribed "Egypt"

RAMILLIES	ALBUHERA	PUNJAUB
LOUISBURG	SALAMANCA	ALMA
GUADALOUPE, 1759	VITTORIA	INKERMAN
QUEBEC, 1759	PYRENEES	SEVASTOPOL
MARTINIQUE, 1762	NIVELLE	DELHI, 1857
HAVANNAH	NIVE	DEFENCE OF LADYSMITH
ST. LUCIA, 1778	ORTHES	
MAIDA	TOULOUSE	RELIEF OF KIMBERLEY
CORUNNA	PENINSULA	
TALAVERA	WATERLOO	PAARDEBERG
BUSACO	CHILLIANWALLAH	SOUTH AFRICA, 1899-1902
BARROSA	GOOJERAT	

"GREAT WAR" BATTLE HONOURS SELECTED FOR "KING'S" COLOUR (10):

MONS	LOOS	LYS
YPRES, 1914, 1915, 1917	SOMME, 1916, 1918	VITTORIO VENETO
SARI BAIR	BAGHDAD	SELLE
	DOIRAN, 1917	

Digitized by Google

A SHORT HISTORY

OF THE

GLOUCESTERSHIRE REGIMENT

THE Gloucestershire Regiment had a long and glorious history before the outbreak of the Great War called the whole nation to arms. That history links the Regiment with all parts of the world, and glorious achievements on many famous battlefields in Europe, Asia, Africa and America are recorded to the credit of the Regiment and proudly remembered by those who serve in it to-day.

The Great War added further glorious pages to the Regiment's history which stands to-day unsurpassed by that of any other regiment in the British Army. Those who fought in the many battalions of The Gloucestershire Regiment in the great world war, proved themselves worthy descendants of the men who fought back to back on the shores of Egypt, who died so gloriously at Chillianwallah, and who won such rare praise at Quatre Bras.

The Regiment, composed of the 28th and 61st Regiments of Foot, which were amalgamated as the 1st and 2nd Battalions of the Gloucestershire Regiment in 1881, dates its history back to February, 1694, when Sir John Gibson, K.G., then Lieutenant-Governor of Portsmouth, raised the 28th in the south of England for special service overseas. Infantry regiments then consisted of pikemen, musketeers and grenadiers. When on parade the pikemen were in the centre.

1694

Digitized by Google

For four years it was engaged in discharging arduous duties in the West Indies and Newfoundland, and on returning to Portsmouth was disbanded, but
1698 was reformed in 1702. The continuity of the Regiment had, however, been maintained
1702 by a detachment which had been left behind in North America and which when the Regiment was reformed was brought home to form the nucleus of the new battalion, the command of which still rested with Sir John Gibson.

The command soon afterwards passed to General Sampson De Lalo, a brave Huguenot officer who was killed at Malplaquet. The Regiment became known as the 28th Foot or "De Lalo's Regiment," and before the year 1702 was out was in Flanders, whence it had been despatched to join the Duke of Marlborough's Army.

There it came under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Robert Dalzell, a veteran soldier who had served through eighteen campaigns under the greatest commanders in Europe, and who died in 1758 at the age of 96.

The 28th fought well at Huy, Neer Hespen, and in the great battle of Ramillies, where it won the
1705–6 first of the many prized battle honours which now adorn its Colours. It shared in many subsequent operations and sieges of Marlborough's, of whom it is stated that "he never fought a battle that he did not win, nor besieged a place he did not take." No greater tribute could be paid to the courage and determination of the troops he commanded.

The Regiment was at the conclusion of Marlborough's campaigns sent to Spain and was involved in
1707 the disaster at Almanza. The Portuguese troops broke and fled, leaving the small British force alone to bear the whole brunt of the battle. The enemy were in overwhelming numbers, and the whole British force sustained great losses, the 28th being almost decimated.

Digitized by Google

It was reformed under Colonel Dalzell in 1709 and was again despatched to Spain, taking part in
1715 the Vigo Expedition, where the vast assemblage of shipping and stores intended for the invasion of England were captured and destroyed.

The 28th served for many years in Ireland, and during this period—in 1734—an officer was appointed to the Colonelcy who left a permanent mark on it.
1734 This was General Philip Bragg, from whom the 28th derived its cherished sobriquet of "The Old Braggs." Colonel Bragg held the command for over a quarter of a century. It is recorded that on a brigade parade many years ago, a subsequent Colonel of the 28th, annoyed at the use by other commanding officers of special titles for their regiments, gave the following word of command :—

"Neither Kings, nor Queens, nor Royal Marines
But 28th Old Bragg's: Brass before and brass behind,
Never feared a foe of any kind.
Shoulder Arms."

The 28th Foot remained at home until 1743 when it was despatched to join the army in Flanders.
1743 There it experienced considerable hardships and bore a gallant part in the battle of Fontenoy
1745 in 1745, where it was commanded by Lord George Sackville, who appears to have been a great favourite with General Bragg.

The 28th were also included in the force that
1746 was despatched on the plundering expedition against L'Orient in 1746.

A few years of tranquillity for the 28th Foot ensued, the only event of note being the raising in 1755 of the regiment that was to become the 61st Foot and subsequently the present 2nd Battalion of the Regiment.

At the commencement of the Seven Years' War the 28th Foot was sent to America to oppose the
1758 French. The Regiment landed in North

Digitized by Google

America in 1759 and added two more battle honours to the roll on the Colours by the creditable part it bore in the brilliant siege and capture of the French naval fortress and arsenal of Louisburg situated on the east coast of Cape Breton Island (known as the Toulon of America) and the expedition to and capture of Quebec.

1759 It was at the head of the 28th and a provisional battalion of Grenadiers that Wolfe scaled the Heights of Abraham and received his mortal wound under the walls of Quebec, dying in the hour of victory in the arms of Lieutenant Brown, 28th Regiment.

1760 The 28th afterwards took part in the expedition to Montreal in 1760 and the final overthrow of the French which resulted in the whole of Canada being placed under British rule.

1762 The 28th next proceeded to Havana, which was wrested from the Spaniards who had taken the opportunity of England being embroiled in several parts of the world to declare war. The capture of Havana was stated to have formed the richest prize the English had ever taken. Havana was afterwards exchanged for the Province of Florida.

1775 The outbreak of the American War of Independence in 1775 again saw the 28th Foot in that continent, and it fought with signal courage at White Plains, Brandywine, and in other early battles.

1777 It was during the Battle of White Plains that the 28th Foot got their nickname of "The Slashers," from the vigorous use they made of their short swords, after having exhausted their ammunition.

1778 From New York the 28th Foot was despatched in 1778 to the West Indies, where it served with distinction in the capture and

1782 subsequent defence of St. Lucia, and in the attempt to relieve St. Kitts in 1782.

It was in this year that the 28th Foot received its first

Digitized by Google

territorial title, being named " The North Gloucestershire Regiment," and the county association thus established has been closely maintained ever since.

Returning home for a few years of peace duty, the 28th next saw active service under the Duke of
1793 York in Flanders in 1793, and its fine soldierly qualities were never better displayed than in the disastrous retreat to Bremen during a winter of extraordinary severity. The General Officer Commanding—General Cathcart—at this time published an order containing the following words :—" Wherever danger is to be apprehended and difficulties to be surmounted you have the 27th and 28th to be called upon."

After service against the French in 1795, the 28th in 1796 sailed again for the West Indies. A
1796 violent storm drove two of the transports with six companies aboard back, and these were eventually sent to Gibraltar. The remaining four companies reached their destination and were employed with the 14th Foot in quelling the revolts in St. Lucia and Grenada; afterwards rejoining the rest of the Regiment at Gibraltar.

The 28th served in the expedition that captured Minorca in 1798, and in the demonstration
1798 against Cadiz in 1800, and coming under the command of Sir Ralph Abercromby it sailed
1801 the following year for Egypt, where it was destined to win undying fame.

Napoleon with India as his object had invaded Egypt with his veteran army, and Sir Ralph Abercromby sailed with a British force to drive the French out. The British effected a landing on the shores of Aboukir Bay, being opposed by the French who were drawn up in strength on the shore. A grim contest ensued, the British leaping out of their boats and wading waist high in the water, fought their way with the bayonet to the land. Forming rapidly they charged the enemy with so much determination that the French were routed and two guns were captured.

Digitized by Google

In the subsequent battle before Alexandria, the 28th found itself at a critical moment when hotly engaged with a large body of the enemy at close quarters, suddenly attacked in the rear by another column of the enemy. With a regiment of less proved courage and maintaining a lower standard of discipline, the situation might easily have resulted in defeat and total destruction, but the Colonel and those under his command were equal to the emergency. He ordered the rear rank to face about, and the attacks from both directions were gallantly and successfully repulsed. To commemorate this striking example of steadiness and pluck, the Regiment was awarded the unique and appropriate distinction of wearing the regimental badge both on the front and back of their head dresses, a privilege they enjoy to this day.

Back Number Day March 21st

The 28th was at Plymouth in 1803, when it was ordered to raise a 2nd Battalion, and both battalions served in Ireland.

1803

In 1805 the 1st 28th went to Hanover, and in 1807 was at Copenhagen, where it helped to man and bring the Danish ships taken in Nelson's battle back to England.

1807

It was in Sweden, in 1808, with Sir John Moore, and went with him to Portugal and formed part of his gallant force that made the bold dash into Spain to strike at Napoleon's line of communications. This bold action led to the wonderful retreat to and Battle of Corunna, an event, it has been claimed, that changed the whole course of history in Europe. The 28th formed part of the rear-guard of which Sir John Moore wrote: "The Reserve was commanded by an indefatigable officer, and the regiments that composed it were admirable. For twelve days these hardy soldiers had covered the retreat, during which time they had traversed eighty miles in two marches, passed several nights under arms in the snow of the mountains, were several times engaged with

1808

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the enemy, and now, assembled at the outposts, had fewer men missing from their ranks (including those fallen in battle) than any other division of the army—an admirable instance of the value of good discipline."

The 28th formed part of the force sent on the ill-fated Walcheren Expedition, and in the same year **1809** proceeded to Gibraltar, when, after the Tarifa Expedition, the Governor of Gibraltar issued the following order :—

"The conduct of the 28th was most praiseworthy during this service, which was rendered excessively fatiguing from the inclemency of the weather and length of the march. This corresponds with the general conduct of that distinguished Regiment."

Both the 28th and 61st served with great distinction under Wellington in the Peninsula, from the passage of the Douro, in 1809, down to the final battle at Toulouse, in 1814. During that time it added a series of battle honours to the Colours, which include "Corunna," "Talavera," "Barrosa," "Albuhera," "Salamanca," "Vittoria," "Pyrenees," "Nivelle," "Nive," "Orthes," "Toulouse," and "Peninsula."

The 28th was not present at San Sebastian, but Sergeant Ball and six grenadiers were, in circumstances honourable to themselves and to the Regiment.

They had been sent down to buy supplies, and were in charge of 2,000 dollars for the purpose. Hearing that San Sebastian was to be stormed on the next day, Sergeant Ball reminded his men that the 28th had been present in almost every action in the Peninsula, and proposed that for the credit of the Regiment they should volunteer for the storming party. The 2,000 dollars were placed in charge of an officer, Sergeant Ball and his party falling in with the 9th Regiment (now Norfolk). Sergeant Ball and his men escaped death and wounds, and rejoined the Regiment with the supplies for which they had come, and with much honour.

During the war no fewer than 21 non-commissioned officers of the Regiment were awarded commissions

Digitized by Google

in recognition of their gallant conduct in the field. The 28th formed part of Kempt's Brigade of Picton's Division at Quatre Bras and Waterloo, and won great distinction, especially in repulsing the French cavalry at Quatre Bras. When the enemy had retired in confusion, Sir James Kempt rode up and said, "Bravo! 28th, the 28th are still the 28th, your conduct to-day will never be forgotten."

1815

The Duke of Wellington wrote also: "They have conducted themselves with the greatest bravery."

At Waterloo the Regiment suffered great loss, and was reduced to less than half its strength. The survivors, carrying the flag of the French 45th Regiment captured in the battle by Private Wheeler, No. 8 Company, marched with the Army of Occupation to Paris, and returned home at the end of the year.

The 28th Regiment, again reduced to a single battalion, served in Malta and the Ionian Islands from 1818 to 1830, and was in Australia from 1835 to 1842.

1818

A disaster to the British force in Afghanistan necessitated the rapid despatch of reinforcements to India, and the 28th was among the troops so sent. On arrival in India the Regiment suffered severely from cholera. It served for six years mostly in Scinde and Bombay, and returned home in 1848.

1842

The Crimean War next called the Regiment on active service, and it was present at the Battle of the Alma, and at Inkerman. It served with marked devotion and courage in the trenches before Sevastopol, and was honourably mentioned for specially good work in the attack on the Cemeteries, where it used Enfield rifles for the first time. Fourteen non-commissioned officers and men were granted the Distinguished Conduct Medal during the Crimean War.

1855

After the war the Regiment served in Malta, 1858; Egypt, 1859; India, 1860-1865; Gibraltar, 1869, and Hong Kong and Singapore, 1874-9, when it returned home.

Digitized by Google

While in the Straits Settlements, a detachment of the Regiment served in the Perak Expedition.

On July 1st, 1881, the 28th Regiment became the 1st Battalion Gloucestershire Regiment. The facings were changed from Light Yellow to White.

The 61st Regiment, now the 2nd Battalion, was originally raised as the 2nd Battalion The
1755 Third Buffs, in 1755, and after three years' active service in France and elsewhere, was formed into a separate unit as the 61st Regiment of Foot, under Major-General Granville Elliott. The 61st was
1758 despatched at once to the West Indies, taking part in the expedition that resulted in the capture of Martinique and St. Lucia, and in the surrender of the island of Guadaloupe. It re-
1759 turned home in 1760, with its ranks sadly depleted by disease and casualties.

In 1771 it was in Minorca, and was one of the four regiments that held Fort St. Philip against
1771 the combined French and Spanish Armies. The fort was held from August, 1781, to February, 1782, by which time enteric fever, scurvy, and the enemy's fire had reduced the strength of the stubborn garrison from 2,500 to 600. Hardly a man of the survivors was fit for duty, and all help was cut off. At length the gallant force surrendered, and the best tribute of their conduct came from the Duc de Crillon, who commanded the besieging forces. The garrison was permitted to march out with all the honours of war, colours flying, drums beating, and bayonets fixed. As the Duc watched the haggard but resolute faces of the garrison as they marched out of the ruined fort they could no longer hold, he said: "No troops ever gave greater proof of heroism than this poor worn out garrison, who have defended themselves almost to the last man."

On returning from Minorca the Regiment was recruited to strength and directed to assume the title of
1782 "The South Gloucestershire Regiment," the

Digitized by Google

first link with the 28th Regiment, which became at the same time "The North Gloucestershires." This link was destined to bring the two regiments into the closest ties, when, in 1881, they became amalgamated as the 1st and 2nd Battalions of the Gloucestershire Regiment.

The 61st saw a good deal of service in the West Indies between 1793 and 1798, being engaged in
1793 action in Martinique, St. Lucia, and Guadaloupe, in which the losses amounted to 400 men.

It was sent to the Cape and fought in the Kaffir War of 1800-01.

It then joined Sir David Baird's force at Kosseir on the Red Sea, proceeding there from India,
1801 and took part in a remarkable military achievement—that of marching across the desert from Kosseir to Kenneh on the River Nile, a march of 130 miles that took nine days. Although the privations and fatigues of that march were so excessive, the 61st lost only one man, a drummer. When the company to which he belonged reached their halting place he was missed, and Private A. Connell at once asked permission to return across the desert to search for him. Notwithstanding his fatigue, Connell, on obtaining permission, set off on his humane errand, and succeeded in finding the missing man, who, however, had expired. This splendid action brought Connell under notice, and he was subsequently given a commission.

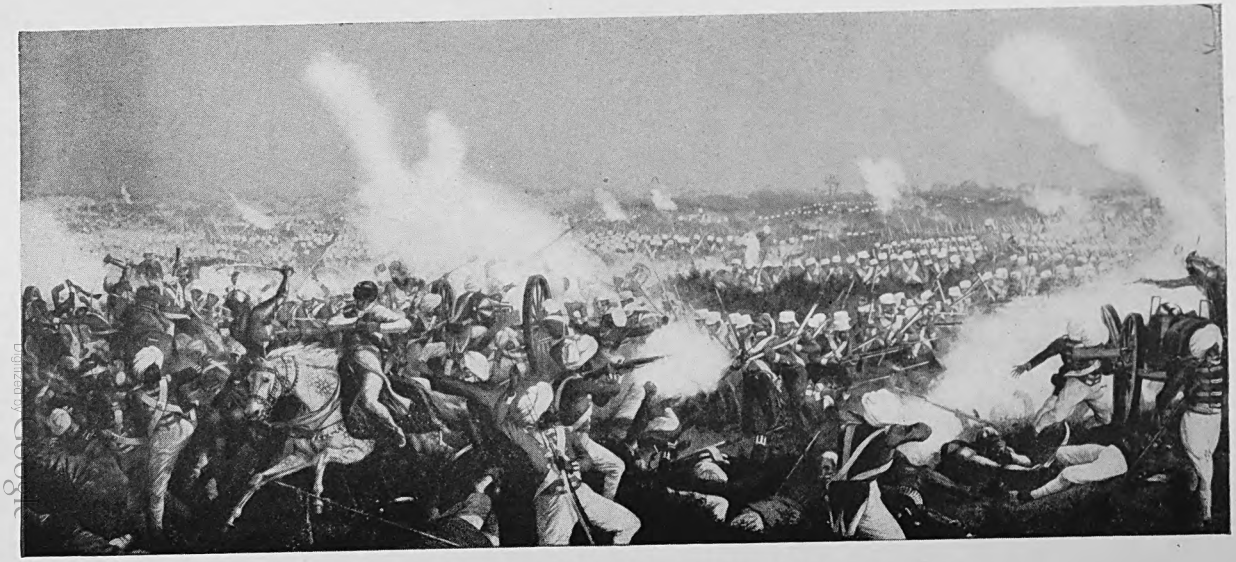
The 61st served in Egypt and the Mediterranean for several years, and was included in the British
1806 Force that so decisively defeated the French at the Battle of Maida (Italy), in 1806, where the 61st found itself confronted by the French Regiment "le 1er Légère," which it completely routed with the bayonet.

The word "Maida" was ordered to be worn on the appointments of regiments present at this battle.

The 61st joined Wellington's Army in Spain, in 1809, and fought side by side with the 28th Regiment in

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



"CHILLIANWALLAH," JANUARY 13TH, 1849.

1809 several of the Peninsular battles. At the Battle of Talavera the Regiment specially distinguished itself, and Corporal Rose was promoted on the field for great gallantry. At the Battle of Salamanca the Colours of the Regiment **1812** were saved by Privates W. Crawford and N. Coulson, who carried them to the top of the hill under a deadly fire. Only 3 officers and 78 other ranks remained standing in the ranks at the close of the battle. Napier, in his "History of the Peninsular War," says: "The struggle was no slight one. The men of General Hulse's Brigade, which was on the left, went down by hundreds, and the 61st and 11th (now Devon) Regiments won their way desperately and through such a fire as British soldiers only can sustain."

For their conduct at Toulouse (1814), the 61st was allowed to wear Silver Acorns on the tails of their coatees, hence the nicknames "Silver Tailed Dandies," and "Flowers of Toulouse."

The Regiment served at home, in Jamaica, Ceylon, and India during the next twenty years.

In 1849 the Regiment served in the second Sikh War and fought gallantly at Chillianwallah and **1849** Goojerat. At Chillianwallah a great body of enemy cavalry surrounded the Regiment and threatened to annihilate it. Colonel McLeod, the Commanding Officer, directed the men to stand back to back and by steady file firing drove the enemy off, an exploit of a similar character that had won the 28th such well deserved fame in Egypt nearly fifty years previously. The 61st then charged the Sikh batteries and captured 17 guns. Lord Gough, after the battle, rode up, bared his white head and thanked the 61st for its splendid courage.

Sir Charles Napier, addressing the Regiment said:— "I have heard of your distinguished conduct at the Battle of Chillianwallah. Sir Colin Campbell tells me that in the heat of his action he ordered you to fire two

Digitized by Google

rounds and then cease firing, and that you did so. A regiment that fires by order and ceases firing by order, can do anything in action."

In the House of Lords the Duke of Wellington said that " the 61st were mainly instrumental in gaining the victory."

Colonel Malleson in his " Decisive Battles of India " says :—" Never did men deserve better of their country than, during that mortal struggle and on that strange day of stern vicissitudes, did the gallant 61st."

The 61st remained in India for many years, seeing a good deal of hard fighting on the North-West
1857 Frontier and in the Mutiny. Its promptitude in seizing Ferozepore prevented the mutineers from capturing the extensive magazines there. The 61st fought with desperate courage in the siege of Delhi where it assaulted the Kashmir Gate and further attacked a rebel battery with such determination that the gunners had not the time to fire a single gun before they were bayoneted by the gallant Gloucesters. During this assault Sergeant-Major Baker of the 61st captured a Colour of the 47th Native Infantry.

In 1881 the 28th and 61st became permanently linked, the 61st changing their facings from buff to white.

Neither Battalion was called on active service again until the outbreak of the South African War
1899 of 1899. The 1st Battalion, then in India, was among the first units to reach the Cape, and took part in the first pitched battles of the war, being present at Rietfontein and Lombards Kop, which preceded the defence of Ladysmith, in which the Battalion was beleaguered. The 2nd Battalion was in Aldershot and was despatched to the Cape as part of the 6th Division. It fought in the Relief of Kimberley and in the operations that led up to the Battle of Paardeberg and the capture of Cronje's force. It shared in the hard marching and fighting that led to the occupation of Bloemfontein and Pretoria. The Regiment performed excellent services throughout the war, its total losses

Digitized by Google

amounting to 3 officers and 248 N.C.Os. and men killed and died of wounds, and 11 officers and 202 other ranks wounded. The 4th and 5th Battalions also took part in the South African War. The 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Volunteer Battalions also sent Service Companies which were attached to the Regular Battalions in the South African War.

The Gloucestershire Regiment had two hundred and twenty years of devoted service to King and Country to its credit when the Great War broke out in August, 1914, and before the "cease fire" sounded at the Armistice on November 11th, 1918, the Regiment had added many glorious pages to its history. The outbreak of the war found the 1st Battalion in barracks at Bordon, Aldershot, as part of the 3rd Infantry Brigade, 1st Division. The Battalion was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. Lovett, the Brigade by Brigadier-General H. J. S. Landon, C.B., and the Division by Major-General S. H. Lomax.

1914

The 2nd Battalion was stationed at Tientsin, North China. When war was declared it was placed under orders to join the combined British and Japanese force organized for the attack on the German port and arsenal, Tsingtau, in Southern China, but before the Battalion could join, other orders were received for it to proceed at once to England, where it arrived in November and proceeded to Winchester, where it mobilized as part of the 81st Infantry Brigade (Brigadier-General F. A. MacFarlane), 27th Division (Major-General T. D'O. Snow, C.B.).

The Depot at Bristol was under the command of Major R. P. Jordan, D.S.O., who was also second-in-command to Lieutenant-Colonel G. H. Burges, commanding the 3rd (Special Reserve) Battalion. Both Depot and 3rd Battalion were destined to play an important rôle in the Regiment's history, for during the period of the war vast numbers of men were raised at the Depot, trained in the 3rd Battalion and drafted out to replace the heavy losses sustained by the many

Digitized by Google

battalions of the Regiment on active service. The total numbers drafted by the 3rd Battalion were : 722 officers and 15,675 other ranks.

The 4th, 5th and 6th Territorial Battalions of the Regiment, at Bristol and Gloucester, were immediately mobilized under their respective commanding officers—Lieutenant-Colonels J. B. Butler, S. S. Marling and H. C. Woodcock—and in due course followed their comrades of the Regular Battalions overseas to uphold the honour of the Regiment in the face of the enemy. Reserve Battalions of the Territorials were also raised and did good service, and as the war progressed new Service Battalions of the Regiment sprang into being, their ranks filled with Gloucestershire men, animated with a fine *esprit de corps* that made possible the highest achievements.

The 1st Battalion was the first to meet the enemy. With the 1st Division, it embarked at Southampton on August 12th, as fine a body of highly-trained soldiers as any officer could desire to command. The Division landed at Havre and after a few days spent in the concentration area the Battalion started its memorable march north to the Belgian frontier on August 20th.

The 1st and 2nd Divisions formed the I Army Corps under the command of (then) Lieutenant-General Sir Douglas Haig. The British Expeditionary Force that commenced this advance, under General Sir John French, consisted of four divisions, and it was the intention that it should form the left flank of the French Army to join up with the Belgian Army about Brussels. But when the British infantry reached Mons the cavalry brought news of large masses of German troops advancing. General French ordered a defensive line to be taken up along the line of the Mons Canal.

The 1st Division was on the right and the 1st Battalion was posted on the extreme right of the British Army. With every confidence the British infantry awaited in their hastily dug shallow trenches the oncoming enemy. The British mustered some 86,000 with 312 guns.

Digitized by Google

August 23rd was a Sunday and the enemy appeared in force against the left of the British line held by the II Army Corps. Every attack was thrown back with heavy loss, but late in the afternoon a message reached Sir John French informing him that instead of there being as believed two German Army Corps attacking his left, there were actually four, whilst a fifth was moving round his left flank. At the same time came news that the French Armies on his right were already in rapid retirement.

The I Army Corps had been but lightly engaged, but to prevent disaster there was nothing for it but to break off the battle that was developing and fall back as rapidly as possible to conform to the new French line. This was very skilfully done, the I Army Corps falling back on Bavai, and the II Army Corps on Le Cateau, where it turned and fought a very gallant battle.

The 1st Division retired upon Landrecies, where on August 26th the 1st Battalion was first engaged with the enemy. The Battalion had been ordered early that morning to entrench a position on the southern outskirts of the village to cover the retirement of the rest of the Brigade. About mid-day, the enemy was seen advancing in dense formation, and long range rifle fire was opened supported by the fire of two guns actually in the Gloucesters' front line. The enemy advance was effectually stopped, but a German aeroplane came over and located the trenches held by the Battalion, with the result that it was subjected to a heavy artillery fire under cover of which the German infantry again attacked the position. The Battalion having succeeded in its object of delaying the enemy was able to break off the fight and continue its retirement. That spirited fight cost the Battalion 35 casualties, of whom 5 were killed.

The retirement was continued almost without a stop, day and night, till the Marne was reached and crossed on September 6th. The Battalion had marched nearly fifty miles into Belgium and after the retirement began marched in thirteen days two hundred miles with very

Digitized by Google

little sleep or food, and discharging the most onerous duties and carrying out wearisome fatigues *en route*. In spite of the continual and severe strain, the march was carried out with the most exemplary discipline and very few men fell out.

After crossing the Marne the British Army found time for much-needed rest and reorganization, and with ranks refilled with drafts from England, it shared in the great combined attack that hustled the enemy almost from the walls of Paris back across the Marne and the Aisne to the Hindenburg Line and the Belgian border.

The 1st Division was most heavily engaged in the crossing of the Aisne and the stubborn battle for the high ground on the far side. The Division crossed near Bourg and pushed the Germans farther and farther up the slopes beyond Moulins, Vendresse, and Troyons up to the plateau along which runs the famous highway known as the Chemin des Dames, which had been strongly fortified by the Germans. Up this slope the 1st Division forced its way on September 13th, and in spite of the great odds against it, succeeded in establishing itself along the crest, where day and night it held on under a pitiless rain of shells and rifle fire.

The Battalion was heavily engaged near the village of Chivy, and with the rest of the 3rd Brigade was afterwards used to fill the dangerous gap between the 1st Brigade on the right and the 2nd Division on the left. Two companies of the Battalion greatly distinguished themselves in support of a battalion of the Guards when heavily counter-attacked. The German hordes continued to attempt to drive back the 1st Division from its advanced positions, for they realized the importance the flank was to the whole British Army. For several days the grim fight for the Chemin des Dames went on. Brigadier-General Landon personally led one determined night attack launched by the Battalion to gain ground. The fight of the Brigade for the Beaulare Ridge was one of the hardest in that great battle and by its success held up the deployment

Digitized by Google

of a dense German column which was being pushed with total disregard for losses between the 1st and 2nd Divisions.

For days on end the British held these precarious positions against every effort the enemy could make. They were without overcoats and drenched to the skin under an incessant rain and overmatched by artillery, but they could not be dislodged from the ground they had won at so great a price. It was a fine exhibition of British pluck and endurance, and the enemy began to realize that their contemptuous estimation of the British Army was likely to cost them dear.

A rush by the Battalion on an enemy's trench on the 18th resulted in the capture of two machine guns and a number of prisoners. The British losses at the Aisne were roughly 10,000, of which the Battalion lost some 150. Eventually the whole British Army was relieved by French Divisions and was withdrawn to make a rapid move northward to the Belgian border to stop the German attempt to reach the Channel Ports.

The task of extricating an army of 100,000 men from the trenches by night and substituting them by an army of equal size but of another nationality was a very hazardous operation. The 1st Division was the last to leave the Aisne and the whole British Army was taken across the rear of the French Army and by road and rail transferred to the left flank. The 1st Division was posted to the extreme left of the British Army and arrived in the Ypres sector in time to relieve the hard-pressed 7th Division which had been gallantly holding their own against great odds. The 3rd Infantry Brigade was ordered to attack Poelcappelle on October 21st

The Battalion took an important part in this attack, being ordered to advance against the enemy north of Langemarck. The Germans were found to be in overwhelming strength, backed up by a numerous and well-served artillery. The advance was held up, the Battalion making a most gallant stand at the hamlet

Digitized by Google

of Koekhuit, where a portion of "C" Company was repeatedly attacked from two directions. A series of brilliant bayonet charges was carried out by the companies, but the enemy came on in ever-increasing strength and a most desperate struggle ensued for the two-mile line held by the 3rd Brigade. For two days the battle raged, the Battalion holding its ground at great cost.

Two platoons of "A" Company and one of "D" Company were all but overwhelmed whilst holding a position just north of Langemarck; all the officers and most of the non-commissioned officers were killed or wounded, but the gallant little band held their own against the repeated attacks, though at times the enemy got within a few yards of their shallow trenches in which they could not stand up. They lost sixty per cent. of their numbers and fired almost 500 rounds per man; bayonets were shot off their rifles, but not a man retired and the position was held till the order came to retire. In these two days' fighting the Battalion lost 3 officers and 29 other ranks killed and 3 officers and 74 other ranks wounded. One historian of the war in describing the episode states: "Many fine deeds of valour were done. In one of these Captain R. E. Rising, of the Gloucestershire Regiment, with ninety men, defended a point with such heroic tenacity that when some days afterwards the Brigadier attempted to get the names of the survivors for commendation not one could be found."

The 1st Division when relieved was moved farther south, and the Gloucesters took a glorious part in the fierce fighting that raged across the Menin road. Here for over a fortnight they were continually in the thick of the German attacks. Shelled incessantly, against which their improvised trenches afforded no shelter, and repeatedly called upon to help stem the rush of newly-arrived German divisions, they held on grimly to their precarious positions, their courage undiminished by their great losses and sufferings. Time and again

Digitized by Google

portions of the line were blotted out of existence, and the Old Braggs or one or more of its companies or even an odd platoon was sent to fill the gap. Not once throughout this historical First Battle of Ypres was the Gloucesters driven from their trenches—never once did they retire one step. Kruiseck, Gheluvelt, Veldhook, Heronthage Wood, and later Klein Zillebeke to the south and Polygon Wood to the north were all scenes of the most desperate fighting against much superior forces of the enemy in which the Regiment figured well. The enemy was held in spite of grievous losses and the road to the Channel Ports was effectively barred. The Battalion paid a heavy price for that victory, for of the 26 officers and 1,000 other ranks who marched through Poperinghe to the Salient on October 20th, only 2 officers and less than 200 marched back through Ypres four weeks later. But their valour was marked by the award of two D.S.Os., two M.Cs., and six D.C.Ms. to members for conspicuous gallantry in that great struggle.

After a period for rest and reorganization, during which the decimated ranks were somewhat restored by the arrival of a big draft from home, the Battalion was again in action at Festubert during December and suffered extremely by the incessant fighting, the mud, the frost and the bad weather.

During January the Battalion was called upon for the most arduous duty in the trenches at **1915** Givenchy, being 48 hours in the line and 48 out.

Sir Arthur Conan Doyle in his "History of the War," says: "There had been a vigorous German attack over the old ground which centres at Givenchy. The German attack which came on in six lines fell principally upon the 1st Gloucestershire Regiment, who held the front trench. Captain H. C. Richmond, who commanded the advanced posts, had observed at dawn that the German wire had been disturbed and was on the alert. Large numbers advanced but were brought to a standstill about forty yards from the British trenches.

Digitized by Google

These were nearly all shot down. Some of the German stormers broke through upon the left of the Gloucesters and for a time the Battalion had the enemy upon their flank and even in their rear, but they showed great steadiness and fine fire discipline."

Throughout the spring the Battalion was never long out of the line, and on May 9th was heavily engaged in the attack on Aubers Ridge, where 250 of all ranks were lost. The Battalion took part in the Battle of Loos, launched on September 25th, and on October 8th won great distinction in the fight for the Chalk Pit, a tragic spot that had been the scene of terrible casualties during the preceding days. The Battalion was holding that portion of the line when the Germans launched a particularly heavy counter-attack. The Battalion was subjected to four hours' continuous shelling and then a mass of infantry charged. They went down in heaps before the rifle fire of the Gloucesters, who lost 150 of all ranks, but succeeded in driving the enemy back. The succeeding winter was again a period of exhaustive endeavour for the Battalion, holding a portion of the Loos sector. A brilliant action was carried out by the Battalion in March, 1916, when Hart's Crater was captured in a snowstorm and consolidated.

In July the Battalion moved to Contalmaison, where on the night of the 15th a remarkable advance was made with the 1st Battalion in the centre.

1916

Sir Arthur Conan Doyle records this advance over 1,200 yards of No-Man's Land as follows :— " A daring daylight reconnaissance by the Commanding Officer of the Gloucesters greatly helped the advance. The men were marched silently in platoons along the road and then reformed into line on the far side of the enemy's barrage, a manœuvre which in the darkness called for great steadiness and discipline, the line being dressed on a shaded lantern in the wood. On the word the eager troops pushed on with such speed that they crossed the German front line trenches and were into the second before their own barrage had properly lifted.

Digitized by Google

Pushing forward again they were soon some hundreds of yards past their objective where they halted close to the formidable Switch Line."

There was a possibility of disaster, increased by one of the other battalions in the Brigade losing direction and charging the Gloucesters whom they saw dimly in the distance and mistook for the enemy. Fine restraint and good discipline on both sides alone prevented a catastrophe. The new line was firmly established and held and the Battalion was prominently engaged in all the subsequent severe fighting of the Somme.

It was in the thick of the fighting in High Wood in September where it carried all its objectives, but at a heavy cost, there being only 3 officers and 96 other ranks left when the Battalion was withdrawn. By that time the Battalion had suffered over 1,000 casualties in the Somme fighting, and this loss was further increased when the Battalion, after a period for rest and reinforcement, returned to the Somme area in November.

At the end of the year, the Battalion was withdrawn to Becourt Wood, and in February went with **1917** the 1st Division to take over part of the French line at Peronne, in which sector, the night before the German withdrawal to the Hindenburg Line commenced, the Battalion carried out a raid near Barleux. Unfortunately the attempt was made on a portion of the line which happened at the moment to be crowded with enemy troops, and the attack was repulsed with heavy loss. Early next morning the Germans had commenced their withdrawal, and the Battalion after considerable fighting penetrated as far as Villers-Carbonnell with patrols on the Somme at Brie. During the spring of 1917 the Battalion was at Peronne, Chuignes, Eclusier and at Warfusée.

The sporting spirit of the Regiment was splendidly maintained throughout the war, and its many great Rugby and other sporting successes were added to at this period by the 1st Battalion winning the 3rd Brigade

Digitized by Google

Rugby and Association Football and the Swimming and Water Polo Championships.

The 1st Battalion was in reserve at the Messines battle in the summer of 1917, and after periods spent at Dickebusch, Staple, and Wormhoudt, the Battalion formed part of the force prepared at the famous " Hush Camp " between Calais and Dunkirk for the projected landing on the Belgian coast behind the German lines, a project that did not materialize. The 1st Division marched instead to Proven, and on November 10th carried out a desperate attack on the Passchendaele Ridge. This had to be carried out without the aid of heavy artillery, owing to the deep mud making it impossible for the big guns to get within range. The attack was successful at first but was driven back by heavy counter-attacks. Notwithstanding this the Battalion fought with unsurpassed bravery.

The greater part of the winter of 1917-18 was spent in the muddy trenches of the Belgian border about Vlamertinghe, Houthulst Forest, Woesten, and Boesinghe. A smart little fight at " Gloucester Post," a point held by a platoon of the Battalion near Poelcappelle, brought further credit to the Regiment.

1918

The Battalion was in this same sector when the last great German attack was launched on March 21st, 1918, an attack into which the enemy put every man and gun he could muster in the last hope of wresting victory. The 1st Division was in the Poelcappelle sector when the attack was launched, but was soon afterwards moved south and sent in to relieve the hard-pressed 54th Division at Givenchy. On April 18th the Germans launched a terrific attack on the 1st Division, and on the 3rd Brigade about Festubert fell the full force of the attack.

The Battalion, under the command of Colonel Tweedie, was holding the ground north-west of the village, and mowed the enemy down as they came into view. But the Germans came on quicker than they could be shot

Digitized by Google

down, and poured into a gap in the line at a point called "Willow Road." This rush carried them into the houses and gardens of Le Plantin, held by a company of the Battalion under Captain Handford.

The company was cut in two, but both halves closing in restored the line, while the reserves, under Lieutenant Gosling, attacked those who had got through. It was a most desperate battle. The enemy ran field guns up and tried to open fire at point-blank range, but the Gloucester men shot the gunners down as quickly as they appeared. The enemy, who had gained the shelter of the houses, sniped the Gloucesters in the trenches, but were gradually dealt with until all were either killed or taken prisoners.

The determined defence put up by the Battalion had its effect, and the enemy endeavoured to withdraw, but in doing so suffered even more heavily than they did on the advance. One historian stated: "The performance of the 1st Gloucestershire Regiment was remarkable, for they were at one time attacked front, rear, and flank by a force estimated at four battalions. It is recorded that the barrels of their Lewis guns were worn smooth by the intensity of their fire during that one day of battle."

The great German attack, although successful at first, was gradually slowed down and finally checked, and during the succeeding three months the losses sustained by the British Army were made good, and in September the Allies made a combined attack all along the line that was destined to drive the Germans back to the Hindenburg Line, and finally in utter defeat to the Rhine.

The 1st Division formed part of Lord Rawlinson's Fourth Army, and was on the extreme right of the British Army, linking it up with the French. The 1st Gloucesters led the 3rd Brigade attack on Fresnoy, capturing both the strongly fortified villages and the cemetery beyond it, and taking many prisoners and machine guns. A day or two later Colonel Tweedie again led a spirited attack on the centre of the German position near

Digitized by Google

Gricourt, which was captured in spite of the tremendous strength of his fortified positions.

The 3rd Brigade fought splendidly in the capture and crossing of the deep St. Quentin Canal at Pontruet. In that great combined attack the British troops in that sector captured 70 guns and 4,000 prisoners. Giving the Germans no rest the British throughout October pushed their attacks day and night. The famous Hindenburg Line was smashed, and the enemy was driven back to the Sambre Canal, along the western bank of which an attempt to stand was made.

On November 4th the Germans made their last organized stand. The Battalion was directed to storm the enemy position on the Canal at Catillon, and led by Major Guild, right well did it carry out the orders, the enemy being routed out of the houses, cellars, and orchards with the bayonet. This enabled the rest of the 3rd Brigade to cross the canal, and by the evening the enemy was everywhere in full retreat, glad to sue for peace, which came a few days later with the declaration of the Armistice.

1914

The record of the 2nd Battalion during the Great War was equally good if less eventful, owing to the difference in the nature of the duty it was called upon to discharge. The Battalion was mobilized as part of the 81st Infantry Brigade, 27th Division, at Winchester, in November, 1914, and after being inspected by His Majesty The King, embarked for France during the second week in December. The Division was pushed up to the front, and spent Christmas Day at Arcque as reserve to the British troops holding the Ypres sector. Before the year was out the Division was pushed up into the front line, and was soon in action against the enemy in and around St. Eloi.

1915

Through the frost, snow and wind of that bitter winter the Battalion rendered splendid service, and was heavily engaged in repulsing a particularly powerful attack launched by the Germans on the St. Eloi trenches in February. Not

Digitized by Google

only was the enemy repulsed, but a gallant counter-attack won back some trenches which had been previously held and lost.

The Battalion moved in March to Hooge, and bore a gallant part in the long and deadly struggle that marked the second Battle of Ypres. The Battalion was assisting the Canadians in holding the front line trenches about Potijze after the Germans had launched their first dastardly gas-attack that nearly destroyed the Allied troops in the trenches there. Later to the east of Hooge, when the German Emperor came in person to inspire his troops to break a way through to the coast, the Battalion won the highest praise for the grim determination with which it held on to its battered positions in spite of heavy losses. In that battle the Battalion lost more than half its strength, including its Commanding Officer, Lieutenant-Colonel G. S. Tulloh, and ten other officers.

On being relieved, the Battalion, with the 81st Infantry Brigade, was highly praised and thanked for its services in this battle by Sir John French. The Division was soon afterwards moved to the Armentières—Bois sector, where during the succeeding few months it was restored to strength and did valuable work in that and the Somme areas.

Towards the end of 1915 a large British Force was ordered to be despatched to Macedonia to join the French there in preventing the enemy force from reaching Salonica. The 27th Division was part of the force organized for the purpose, and the Battalion sailed from Marseilles in December for Salonica.

On landing it was pushed straight up country to the front line, and its experiences during the re-
1916 mainder of the war were very trying and varied. Terrific heat and dust in summer, with epidemics of malaria and influenza, and blizzards with privations of all kinds marked the winters. The British troops bore these hardships with great fortitude while constructing and holding the vast systems of

Digitized by Google

fortifications on the Vardar and Struma fronts. The Battalion formed part of the Struma Valley Force, where malaria was particularly virulent.

The Battalion then formed part of the 82nd Infantry Brigade, and took a full share of the hard work and in the periodical operations against powerful Turkish forces. In the Battle of Yenikoy in August, 1916, the Battalion led attacks on Bala and Zir, being identified with one of the most brilliant successes of the Macedonian campaign. For its part in the succeeding operations in the Struma Valley, and especially in the severe fighting at Rabbit Wood in front of Séres, the Battalion was highly praised by the British and French Commanders-in-Chief, and also the Crown Prince of Serbia.

Throughout 1917 the Battalion continued to discharge very arduous duties in Macedonia, mostly on **1917** the Struma front, but in June, 1918, the Division was moved up to the Vardar front, **1918** where it took part in the brilliant attack that was destined to smash the enemy's defence lines and open the way for the famous Allied advance into Bulgaria.

The Battalion was given the place of honour in the final assault on the enemy's lines in the Roche Noir Salient on September 1st and so was among the first British troops to pierce the enemy's defences. The attack was carried out with so much determination that the enemy's fortifications failed to stop them. In spite of grave losses the troops pressed on and Germans, Austrians, Hungarians, and Bulgarians, who were backed up by a powerful artillery, were driven at the point of the bayonet out of every position they had prepared, and fled in utter disorder. The Allied troops pressed on after them and the retreat became a rout. The collapse of resistance on this front heralded the beginning of the end of the Great War.

The Battalion bore a gallant part in this splendid battle and was the recipient of congratulatory telegrams from General Sir George Milne, commanding the British

Digitized by Google

forces, and from the Allied Commanders. The Battalion went on with the victorious army in the triumphal march through Serbia and Bulgaria, *en route* for Sofia. Bulgaria suing for peace led to the withdrawal of the British force, who were then directed to move on Belgrade. On Austria and Turkey also suing for peace, the 27th Division was ordered to return to Salonica, where Christmas was spent.

1919 In January 1919, a British Expeditionary Force was hastily organized to proceed via Constantinople and the Black Sea to South Russia to protect British interests in the Batoum—Baku oil fields. The 82nd Brigade was despatched to Tiflis where the Battalion was inspected by General Sir George Milne, commanding troops in the Black Sea Army, who very highly praised its fine service in the war, and congratulated all ranks on their excellent turn out and appearance. In July, 1919, the Battalion returned to England after a period of years filled with great events, in which it had worthily upheld the good name of the Regiment.

The early days of the war brought many new battalions of the Regiment into being and before the war was over a score of battalions were in existence, the majority being engaged in one or other of the theatres of war, all behaving with credit and honour to the Regiment.

The 1st/4th and 6th Territorial Battalions were among the first to go overseas as part of the 48th Division, and in May, 1915, were in trenches about Ploegsteert. They fought splendidly in the Battle of the Somme. The famous Leipzig Redoubt was captured by " B " and " C " Companies of the 4th Battalion on August 21st, and won the congratulations of the Divisional Commander, who described the operation as " a model attack."

The 1st/4th Battalion fought with characteristic courage all through the war, being specially distinguished at St. Emilie in 1917, where it captured a field gun. It took part in the third Battle of Ypres, and in November,

Digitized by Google

1917, proceeded with the 48th Division to Italy where it carried out a particularly brilliant attack on the Austrian trenches on the Asiago Plateau, and shared in the subsequent fighting till the Armistice ended the war. It returned to England in March, 1919.

The 2nd/4th Battalion (T.F.) left England in May, 1916, and with the 2nd/6th Battalion formed part of the 61st Division, in which both Battalions greatly distinguished themselves. Major-General Sir Colin Mackenzie, the divisional commander, complimented the 2nd/4th Battalion for its great courage in holding a position near La Vacquierie on December 2nd—5th, 1917, where its losses were so heavy, including 27 officers, that on being relieved in the trenches so desperately held it was reorganized into five platoons and a few months later was disbanded.

The 5th Battalion (T.F.) also formed part of the 48th Division, and just as worthily upheld the good name of the Regiment. In the attack on the Bois L'Eveque in October, 1917, Private F. G. Miles was awarded the Victoria Cross for a remarkable exhibition of cool courage and daring in attacking single-handed and capturing two machine-gun posts.

The 2nd/5th Battalion formed part of the 184th Infantry Brigade, 61st Division, which also won great credit. Referring to the desperate fighting on the Western Front in April, 1918, Sir Arthur Conan Doyle in his history of the war says of the attack on the Bois Pacqua : " This forward movement was continued later by the 61st Division who did very good work on April 23rd, Brigadier-General Pagan, of the 184th Brigade, being a leader in the advance, which was notable for a fine attack by the 2nd/5th Gloucesters under Colonel Lawson."

The 1st/6th Battalion (T.F.) formed part of the 144th Brigade, 48th Division, and won a good name for courage and discipline, being specially distinguished for a desperate attack carried out on Pozières Hill.

The 7th (Service) Battalion was formed in August,

Digitized by Google

1914, and as part of the 39th Infantry Brigade, 13th Division, sailed for the Dardanelles early in 1915 and took part in the historical landing at Gallipoli. The Battalion was almost wiped out in attacking and holding Chunuk Bair Hill in August, every officer and non-commissioned officer being killed or wounded. General Sir Ian Hamilton specially mentioned the Battalion for their conspicuous gallantry. After being reorganized in Egypt, the Battalion went to Mesopotamia and took part in the relief of Kut, the occupation of Baghdad, and the subsequent total defeat of the Turkish Army north of that town. It afterwards joined the Persian Expeditionary Force and after a march of 800 miles reached the Black Sea, where it carried out police work till disbanded in 1919.

The 8th (Service) Battalion went to France in July, 1915, as part of the 57th Infantry Brigade, 19th Division, and took part in the battles of Loos, the Somme, Messines, third Battle of Ypres, and the great operations in 1918 which led to final victory. It was awarded the Divisional Badge of the Butterfly as the best fighting unit in the Division. Two of its members, Lieutenant-Colonel Carton de Wiart, D.S.O., and Captain M. A. James, M.C., were awarded Victoria Crosses.

The 9th and 10th (Service) Battalions also served in France, the latter being embodied in the 1st Infantry Brigade, 1st Division, in 1915 and fighting at Hulluch and other subsequent battles.

The 11th (Service) Battalion was a feeding unit.

The 12th (Service) Battalion was identified with Bristol, and worthily upheld the fighting tradition of that city by its splendid service in the 5th Division, especially at Longueval in July, 1916.

The 13th (Pioneer) Battalion served with the 39th Division in France, and the 14th (Bantam) Battalion rendered equally distinguished service with the 35th Division. Other battalions of the Regiment formed were the 15th, 16th, 17th and 18th (Service) Battalions,

Digitized by Google

which did good work either at home or at the front, while mention must be made of Lieutenant-Colonel D. Burges, D.S.O., who won the V.C. while commanding a battalion of the South Wales Borderers.

Such, briefly, is the history of a splendid old Regiment, which has reaped honour and glory in all parts of the world. Those who have served in its ranks have built up a great reputation for it and have handed on to those who serve in the Regiment to-day glorious traditions won in peace and war which it should be the earnest endeavour of all ranks to cherish and maintain in all their untarnished splendour.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE Back Badge — Sphinx inscribed "EGYPT," surrounded by wreath of laurels and worn on the back of the headdress—a distinction conferred upon the 1st Battalion in commemoration of their distinguished conduct at the Battle of Alexandria, 21st March, 1801. In this Battle, the 28th was hotly engaged with a large body of the enemy at close quarters, when it was suddenly attacked in the rear by another enemy column. The Regiment proved itself equal to this emergency, the rear rank facing about, and gallantly and successfully repulsing the attacks from both directions.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

SEP 2 4 1958

Digitized by Google

FLEX BINDING